

# THE New-found Politicke.

DISCLOSING  
THE SECRET NATVRES  
and dispositions as well of priuate persons  
as of Statesmen and Courtiers ; wherein the Go-  
uernments, Greatnesse, and Power of the most nota-  
ble Kingdomes and Common-wealths of the  
world are discouered and censured.

Together with  
Many excellent Caueats and Rules fit  
to be obserued by those Princes and States of  
Christendome, both Protestants and Papists, which  
haue reason to distrust the designes of the King of  
*Spain*, as by the Speech of the Duke of *Hernia*,  
uttered in the Counsell of SPAYNE, and  
hereto annexed, may appeare.

Written in Italian  
By *Traiano Boccalini* Gentleman of *Rome*,  
and priuiledged by sundry Princes of *Italy*, and  
also out of *Italy* by the most Christian King.

And now translated into English for the  
benefit of this Kingdome.

---

LONDON,  
Printed for *Francis Williams*, neere the  
Royall Exchange. 1626.



THE NEW YORK  
PUBLIC LIBRARY

539653

ASTOR, LENOX AND  
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS,  
1912

R

L

0 - 2 - 2 - 0

tevens out 2/12



# TO THE KINGS MOST *Excellent Maiestie.*

Dread Soueraigne,

**H**e kinde welcome which these Raggualioes  
of Boccacini lately found among the French  
and in other Princes Courts, who suspect  
the incroaching power of the House of Au-  
stria, hath moued me to collect and consecrate them in En-  
glish weeds vnto your Maiestie. The First was trans-  
lated by M. Florio, sometime Seruant to your Royall  
Mother of blessed memory. The Second by one, vnto  
whom the common-wealth cannot as yet be beholding for  
his name; And the Third part by me, although farre infe-  
riour vnto either of them for any knowledge which I dare  
arrogate to my selfe in the Italian Tongue, hauing dis-  
continued the vse thereof since my returne out of Italie,  
being aboute 24. yeeres past, untill this present time. Yet  
neuerthelesse, when I had fully perused the noueltie of the  
Authors straine, the pleasant conceits of the worke, enter-  
laced with some matters of consequence, which might  
serue for caueats and annotations to such as stand inter-  
essed in State-affaires, I was encouraged to renew that  
which I had so long neglected, and by compiling some of  
the choifest Obseruations, to present them to your iudici-  
ous view. And because my chiefe cares for many yeeres

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

haue beene fixt vpon that most hopefull Plantation in the  
Iland commonly called The New-found Land, I entituled  
this Worke The New-found Politicke, as well in regard  
of my affection deuoted to that place, as for the newnesse  
of the stile and matter, wherein the Author poetically  
discouers some Mysteries of Policie, which may rowze  
vpon the Spirits of the State of Venice, and other  
Neighbouring Prouinces, to watch with Argus Eyes, lest  
the deceitfull shew of Indian Gold, a fitter bait for  
Turks and Moores, might produce any sudden Innouation  
preiudiciall to the libertie of Christendome, which  
ought to flourish in mutuall loue and charitie, and not to  
liue in continuall iealousies to be surprized by any Prince  
that acknowledgeth Christ for their vniuersall Head.  
The King is wise as is the Angell of God, and conceiues  
more than it becomes a man of my ranke to insinuate  
to so high a Maiestie concerning the Affaires of long-  
banded Princes, whom Experience, and not the admonition  
of a contemplatiue Scholar, hath taught to remember  
that Verse of the Poet :

Tunc tua res agitur paries cum proximus ardet :

*When the next wall vnto your house doth burne,*

*Looke to your selfe betimes ; next is your turne.*

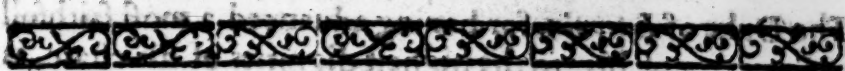
The King of Kings long preferue your Maiestie in all  
Earthly happinesse, to his glory, our comfort, and the defence  
of the true Christian Faith. So praieth from the  
bottome of his heart

Your Maiesties most humble Subiect,

WILLIAM VAVGHAN.



## The Contents.



### The Contents of the first Part.

#### Chap. 1.

**T**HE Company or Corporation of *Politicians*, sees vp a Ware-house or publike Shop in *Parnassus*, in which are to be sold diuers kinds of wares viefull for the Vertuous life of the Learned.

#### Chap. 2.

The most soueraigne vertue *Fidelitie*, being secretly fled from *Parnassus*, *Apollo* hauing discovered where she had hidden herselfe, dispatcheth the two most excellent Muses, *Melpomene* and *Thalia*, to perswade her to returne.

#### Chap. 3.

*Apollo* perceiuing the great disorders, that the flight of the sacred vertue *Fidelitie* bred in all Mankind, by the mediation of the Soueraigne Muses, and of the sublime Heroike Vertues, obtaineth her returne into *Parnassus*.

#### Chap. 4.

*Iustus Lipsius*, to make amends for the fault he had committed in accusing of *Tacitus*, doth so passionately obserue him, that before *Apollo* he is charged to idolatrize him: whereupon after a faigned, and but verball punishment, he is in the end by his Maiestie, not onely absolved, but highly commended and admired.

#### Chap. 5.

The chiefeft learned men of *Parnassus* are tutors vnto *Apollo*, to inioyne *Tacitus*, to recompile those books of his *Annales* and *Histories*, which are lost.

#### Chap. 6.

*Cornelius Tacitus*, for some complaints vrged against him by diuers great Princes, by reason of certaine politicall spectacles, which he hath deuised, most preiudiciall vnto their gouernment, hauing beene imprisoned, is by *Apollo* set at liberty.

## The Contents.

### Chap. 7.

The Duke of *Laconia*, for hauing aduanced a most faithfull Secretary of his, to the highest dignities of his estate, is accused before *Apollo* to idolatrize and dote vpon a *Mignon*: but he doth most egregiously defend himselfe.

### Chap. 8.

*Apollo*, bewailing the wofull wracks, which in the Courts of great Princes, his vertuous followers suffer, and fall into; for to assure their Nauigation, commandeth some of the chiefeft learned men in his Dominion, to endeouour to frame a Sailing-Card, to saile safely by land.

### Chap. 9.

The Lord *Iohn de la Casa*, hauing presented his quaint *Galatco*, or booke of Manners vnto *Apollo*, meeteth with great difficulties in diuers Nations, about their promises to obserue the same.

### Chap. 10.

*Apollo* hauing highly commended the Statute, made by the most mighty Kings of *Spaine*, that no Aduocates, Lawyers, or Proctors, shall passe into the *Indies*, the Doctors of the Law finding themselves aggrieved, complaine vnto his Maiestie.

### Chap. 11.

An Apothecarie, at the very instant, that he is taken prisoner by Sargeants, without being examined at all, is forthwith condemned and sent to the Gallies.

### Chap. 12.

The vertuous people of *Apolloes* State, hauing consigned vnto his Maiesties Generall Treasurer, the accustomed Donatiue of a thousand conceits, according to their custome they beg a boone or grace at his hands.

### Chap. 13.

By letters intercepted, and taken from a Currier, dispatched by some Princes to the Lake of *Averno*, the common people come to know, that the rancors and harreds now raining among diuers Nations, are occasioned and stirred vp by the artifices of their Princes.

### Chap. 14.

## The Contents.

### Chap. 14.

*Antonio Perez* of Aragon, hauing presented the Booke of his Relations vnto *Apollo*, his Maiestie doth not onely refuse to accept it, but commandeth the same to bee presently burnt.

### Chap. 15.

The Monarchy of *Spaine* is much aggriued, that her falsehoods and treacheries are discovered,

### Chap. 16.

The Spanish Monarchie arriueth in *Parnassus*; Shee intreateth *Apollo* to be cured of a Cauterie: Shee is dismissed by the politicke Physicians.

### Chap. 17.

The Spanish Monarchy goeth to the Oracle of *Delphos*, to know whether she shall euer obtaine the Monarchy of the world; she hath a crosse answer.

### Chap. 18.

*Philip* the second of that name, King of *Spaine*, after long strife about his Title, makes his solempne entry into *Parnassus*.

### Chap. 19.

The Dogs of the Indies are become Wolves.

### Chap. 20.

The *French* are humble suitors vnto *Apollo*, to know the secret, how to perfume gloues after the *Spanish* fashion.

### Chap. 21.

Why the Monarchy of *Spaine* is lately retired into her Palace.

### Chap. 22.

How the ministers and officers of *Spaine* are continually interested in their priuate profit.

### Chap. 23.

*Apollo* hauing vsed all possible meanes, and exquisite diligence, to haue some one of the Court-Mignons, or Princes-Idols taken and apprehended, doth seuerely proceed against one lately fallen into the hands of the Iudges.



## The Contents.

### Chap. 24.

The whole Race or Genus of Sheep send their publike Ambassadors to *Apollo*, by whom they earnestly intreat him to grant them sharp teeth and long hornes: whose suit is by his Maiestie scorned and reiected.

### Chap. 25.

In a publike Congresse or Assembly, contrary to the accustomed manner of the Phoebean Court, *Force* having pretended to precede *Reputation*; that illustrious Ladie with an excellent resolution, maintaineth her reputation and credit which was in some danger.

### Chap. 26.

The Prouince of *Focides* by her Ambassadors complaineth vnto *Apollo*, that his Maiesties officers doe not permit her to enioy her priuiledges: whose request is not only reiected, but they haue a most sharp and vnpleasant answer.

### Chap. 27.

*Socrates* hauing this morning beene found dead in his bed, *Apollo* useth all possible diligence, to discover the true occasion of his so sudden death.

### Chap. 28.

*Natalis Comes* the Historian, for hauing spoke something in a publike congresse of learned men, that grievously offended *Apollo*, is by his Maiestie seuerely punished.

---

## The Contents of the second Part.

### Chap. 1.

**M**aximilian the Emperour is aduertised of the trouble begun among his sonnes.

### Chap. 2.

Most of the Princes, Common-weales, and States of Europe, are weighed in a paire of Scales, by *Lorenzo Medici*.

### Chap. 4.

*Almansor*, sometime King of the *Moor*s, encountring with the

## The Contents.

the Kingdome of Naples, they relate one to another the miseries they sustaine by the oppression of the Spaniards.

Chap. 5.

*Sigismund Battor* learneth the Latine Tongue.

Chap. 6.

The Cardinall of *Toledoes Summa* is not admitted into the Library of *Parnassus*.

Chap. 7.

The Monarchy of *Spaine* throweth her Physitian out of the window.

Chap. 8.

Most of the States of the world are censured in *Parnassus* for their errors.

Chap. 9.

The Monarchy of *Spaine* inuiteth the Cardinall of *Toledo*, to be her Theologian, which he refuseth, and why.

Chap. 10.

The *Spaniards* attempt the acquisition of *Savoy*, but doe not preuaile.

Chap. 11.

The Duke of *Alva* being arrived at *Parnassus*, in complementing with *Prospero Colonna*, they fall foule about defrauding the *Colonels* of their Titles.

The Poste of *Parnassus* to the Reader.

---

## The contents of the third Part.

Chap. 1.

**A**fter an exquisite Examination and triall made of those Wits, which ought to haue the charge of Prouinciall Governments, a rank of Gouvernors are published in *Parnassus*, and wholesome auisoes for all Gouvernours, Iudges, and vnder-Officers of State.

A 3

Chap. 2.

## The Contents.

### Chap. 2.

The most Illustrious Monarchies resident at *Parnassus*, demand by what meanes the *Venetian Lady* got such exact obedience, and exquisite secrecie of her Nobilitie, whereof she giues them conuenient satisfaction.

### Chap. 3.

The *Romane Monarchy* demanding of *Cornelius Tacitus* the resolution of a *Politick Question*, receiues full satisfaction of the Shepherd *Melibæus*, who casually was there present.

### Chap. 4.

Many people hauing wasted their meanes by gluttonous feasts, prodigall fare, and pompous apparell, for the moderating of such lauish expences, doe desire a Statute of their Princes, but they misse of their purpose.

### Chap. 5.

*Terence* the Comedian being imprisoned by *Iason* the Pretour of *Vrbine*, for keeping a Concubine, is deliuered by *Apollo* with very great dishonour to the Pretour.

### Chap. 6.

*Domitius Corbulo* for certaine words spoken by him during the time of his gouernment, which sauoured of Tyrannie, is called in question by the Criminall Magistrates, but in the end, to his greater glory, dismissed.

### Chap. 7.

By the promotion of *Diogenes* the Cynick, vnto a higher place, the honourable chaire of the Tranquillitie of a priuate life being vacant, *Apollo* prefers the famous Philosopher *Crates* to that charge, who refuseth it.

### Chap. 8.

A Controuersie hapning betwixt the Gouvernours of *Pindus* and *Libethrum* about matters of Iurisdiction; *Apollo* punisheth them both.

### Chap. 9.

The Vertuous of *Parnassus* doe visit the Temple of the Diuine Prouidence, whom they humbly thanke for the  
great



## The Contents.

great Charitie which his supreme Maieftie from time to time hath vouchsafed to shew vnto Mankind.

### Chap. 10.

A Contention hapning between many Learned men, which might be the most notable Politick Law, or most excellent Custome worthy of commendation in the flourishing State of *Venice*, the same is finally decided and determined by the *Venetian* State herselfe, to whose arbitrement the Question is referred by their generall consent.

### Chap. 11.

The Doctors of the Chaire hauing admitted into their Vniuersitie some famous Poeticall Ladies, *Apollo* commands them to be dismissed home to their Families.

### Chap. 12.

The Lady *Victoria Colonna* intreats of *Apollo*, that the infamie which women incurred for cuckolding their Husbands, might likewise extend to adulterous Husbands. *Apolloes* answer.

### Chap. 13.

A Poetaster for playing at Cards and deuising the Game called *Triumph* or *Trump*, is brought before *Apollo*, who after he had deeply entred into the mysticall meaning of the said Game, not only dismisseth him, but granteth him an yearly pension to instruct his Courtiers in that new Arte.

### Chap. 14.

It being noted, that *Petrus Thraseus* in the company of his sonne in law *Eluidius Priscus* did vse commonly to frequent the house of the Lady *Victoria Colonna*, he is grievously rebuked by *Apollo*.

### Chap. 15.

A learned Gentleman of *Rome* begs a remedie of *Apollo*, to make him to forget certaine grievous wrongs, which hee had receiued in the Court of a great Prince: for which cause his Maieftie causeth him to drinke a cup-full of the water of *Lethe*, but with vnfortunate successe.

### Chap. 16.

## The Contents.

### Chap. 16.

*Apuleius* his golden Ass, and *Plautus* his Ass do complain vnto *Apollo* of the great severity which their Masters vsed in bearing them. But they are sent away with no pleasing answer.

### Chap. 17.

A generall Reformation of the world by the seven wise men of *Greece*, and by other Learned men, is published by expresse Order from *Apollo*.

### Chap. 18.

The Duke of *Hernia* his speech in the Councell of *Spaine* to a proposition, Whether it were expedient for his *Catholike Maiestie*, to conclude a peace with his brother in law the Duke of *Savoy*.

---

# THE

---

---

---



# THE NEW-FOWN D POLITICKE.

---

## THE FIRST PART.

---

*The Company or Corporation of Polititians, sets  
vp a Ware-house or publike Shop in Parnassus,  
in which are to be sold diuers kinds of wares  
Usefull for the vertuous life of the learned.*

---

The first Raguaglio of the first part.

---



He great businelle, which the *Corpora-  
tion of Polititians* hath for so many  
moneths negotiated with these *Ex-  
chequer-officers*, that they might see  
vp a publike Ware-house, common to  
their *Nation*, in *Parnassus*, with large  
priuiledges for *Polititians*, was the last  
week fully concluded and established.  
And euen yesterday, in the great Market-place, they made a  
most sumptuous shew of all such wares, as men commonly  
do most stand in need of.



## 2 *The New-found Politicke.*

And euen as *Menante* will not thinke his labour ill employed to giue you notice of the chiefeſt of them, ſo is hee perſwaded, that ſome honeſt man will not diſdaine to reade them. Firſt then, there is to be ſold in that admirable *Ware-houſe* great ſtore of ſtuffing, or (as ſome call it) quilting, which though it be of no eſteeme among the baſe and vulgar ſort of men, yet is it valued and bought vp at a very high rate of many wiſe and vnderſtanding men, namely, of *Courtiers*, who haue diſcouered, that it is the ſhearings or nap of thoſe rich clothes of *Prudence*, which wiſe men weaue with the fine wooll of *Patience*, and ſerues to boulſter or fill vp the pads of ſeruitude, or pack-ſaddles of bondage, to the end they may ſit the more eaſie vpon the backes of wretched *Courtiers*, and hide thoſe lothſome bloody gallings and feſtered ſores, which ſeem moſt vgly in ſuch men, who albe it they be knowne for capitall enemies vnto all paines and labour, are not norwithſtanding induced to ſerue & follow the *Courts*, with an aſſured hope, there to liue an idle merry life, and proudly to command others. It hath by diuers beene obſerued, (as a thing regardfull) that many young men, who though they may liue well in their own Fathers houſes, haue neuertheleſſe bought vp good ſtore of that precious ſtuffing, and haue therewith quilted certaine petty boulſters, vnto which they enure themſelues in the ſeruiſe of private houſes, only that they may not come into *Courts*, as vnbroken colts, and in receiuing the firſt time the boiſtrous heavy pack-ſaddle of *Court ſeruitude*, aſſure themſelues not to commit thoſe fond actions, and fantaſticke pranks, which enforce houſe-ſtewards, and hall-ſhiers (who are the rough houſe-breakers of young *Courtiers*) to giue them ſome laſhes of bitter diſtaſtes, thereby to bring them vnto the patient toleration of that irkeſome and toileſome thraldome. There is alſo ſold in the ſaid Ware-houſe great ſtore of moſt excellent Pencils for thoſe *Princes*, who in their vrgent occasions, are often enforced to paint white for blacke vnto their people. And although this be a merchandize only fit for *Princes*, yet doe thoſe falſe-hearted men make great prouiſion of them, that  
relying

relying on the traffique of apparances, apply themselves to nothing more, than to the infamous profession to leere and laugh in ones face, and vnderhand craftily to deceiue him, and to winde about the silly credulous people with fawning faire words, and foule tainted deeds. They haue likewise an infinite quantity of *spectacles* of admirable and sundry vertues : Some of which serue to giue light vnto those salacious and beastly luxurious men, whose sight doth so faile them in the fury of their vnbridled and libidinous lust, that they cannot discerne Honour from Infamie, nor know a friend from a foe, a stranger from a kinsman, nor any other thing worthy of respect.

So great is the riddance, that those *Politicke merchants* do hourly make of such *spectacles*, as all may evidently perceiue, that few or none are those men, that in carnall things haue a good or cleare sight.

They haue besides a kinde of *spectacles*, which serue to dimme all light, and shorten all sight : and the *Politicians* themselves affirme, that albeit these *spectacles* are more behoouefull vnto all sorts of men, than those that extend the sight farre off, yet are they most needfull vnto *Courtiers*, by reason, that there doe often present themselves most lothsome and nastie things vnto the sight of honest men.

And for so much as to turne ones backe towards them may breed displeasure, yea and anger in mightie men or great Lords: and to looke vpon them is a torment and vexation vnto an honest minde : And therefore for a man vpon any such occasion to put so strange *spectacles* vpon his nose, he is free frō the troublous molestation to see the lothsome and abominable things of this filthe corrupted world, and the vulgar silly multitude is induced to thinke, that a man viewes them with more heedie curiositie.

There are also other *spectacles* very good to preserue the sight of those vnkinde and vnthankfull men, which the very first day of any new dignitie receiued, waxeth so dim and misty, as it reacheth euen to the bounds of Ingratitude.

The *Politicians* that keepe the shop and sell them, say

that they are made with the precious stuffe of the fast-holding memory of benefices receiued, and of the remembrance of fore-past friendship.

But most wondrous are those *spectacles* framed with such skilfull art, that they cause to those that haue them on, *Placet to seeme: Elephants, and Pigmeys Giants*. These are greedily bought vp by certaine great men, who putting them vpon the noses of their vnfortunate attendants, do so alter and distract their sight, as if their *Lord* doe but once lay his hand vpon their shoulder, or looke vpon them with a smile, though artificiall, and perhaps forced, they deeme it as a reward of five hundred crownes a yeere.

But the *spectacles* lately inuented in the *Low-countries* are likewise bought vp at a very deare rate by *great Lords*, and distributed among their *Courtiers*, which being vsed by them, they cause those offices and rewards, to which their sight shall neuer attaine, nor perhaps their age reach, to seeme neare at hand.

Moreouer, there are to be sold in the said *Ware-house* (but at a most excessiue rate) humane eyes, which are of admirable vertue, since it is impossible to thinke, how infinitely a man bettereth his owne things, when he viewes them with others eyes: yea the very *Politicians* themselves protest vpon their consciences, that with no other, or better instrument, may a man sooner attaine vnto the happinelle, to purchase that thrice excellent vertue, so ambitiously aimed at, and sought after by great men, of *NOSCE TE IPSVM*.

There are also sold in that shop, certaine *Compasses*, not made of silver, of brasse, or of Steele, but of the pure interresse of the most fine reputation, that may be found in all the Mine of Honour: And they are most admirable to measure a mans owne proper actions, since experience hath manifestly caused all men to know, that *Compasses* framed of the base stuffe of fantasticke conceit, of selfe-will, or of meere interresse, do seldome proue iust and true to those, who in their owne affaires desire to draw their liues parallel. Moreouer, such *Compasses* proue most excellent to those, that doe exactly  
possesse



possesse the skill and art to vse them, to take the iust measure of the latitude of those ditches, which for their credit and reputation they are compelled to leape cleane ouer, and not runne in danger to fall or stumble in the middle of them, and carelessly bury themselves aliue in the puddle of folly and vnheerlinesse: Nor can those lawish waste goods, and spend-thrifts, whose purses being but shallow and poore, will waste and spend like *Princes*, with any other instrument, better learne the most necessary vertue, so make the step answerable to the leg, than with these *Compasses*.

The said *Politicians* doe likewise sell a numberlesse quantitie of boxes or leather-cases full of *Mathematicall Instruments*, such as *Surveyors* or *Land-Meters* doe vse, which are more than necessarie, exactly to measure, and in all dimensions to square out those with whom a man is to treat about graue affaires, and important negotiations, or to confer and impart weighty secrets.

The said *warehouse* hath also great vterance of certaine *Iron-tooles*, which resemble those, that *Chirurgions* or tooth-drawers vse, and call *Barbicans*. They serue to open and dilate the chaps of those vnhappy *Courtiers*, which being to make a vertue of necessitie, are often compelled to swallow huge great pumpions in stead of small mastick pills.

They haue likewise great store of *Beesoms*, made of *circumspession*, whereof warie *Courtiers* make good prouision aforehand, that they may every morning and euening diligently sweepe from off the staires, which they daily goe vp and downe, perilous hard Peasen, scattered vpon them by certaine enuious and maleuolent spirits, who taking greater pleasure in spoiling other mens affaires, than in accommodating their owne, doe onely exercise the shamelesse trade, and trecherous worke, of breaking the neck of honest and veracious mens reputation.

Moreouer, there is in the shop to be sold (but for the weight in gold) a kinde of most perfect and superexcellenc *Inke* of the maker, far more precious than *Rise of the most far-fetched Azure*, which by the quills of learned Writers



## 6 *The New-found Politicke.*

(being vertuously and skilfully displaid on books) serueth to embalme the dead bodies of vertuous men, and to yeeld them most aromatically odoriferous vnto after-ages; whereas those of the ignorant yeeld a most loathsome stench, and are soone turned into vsclesse ashes. And with this ink only is the name of the learned eternized in the memorie of all *Nations*, which in the illiterate and ignorant doth suddenly die and vanish. A balsame (truly) of more than humane vertue, since those, that therewith annoint themselves, liue, although they die, and departing out of the world, but with their bodies, abide perpetually therein with the memorie of their learned works.

An infinite summe of money doe likewise those *Politicians* receiue daily for a kinde of *Oyle*, which they sell, for so much as it hath often beene experienced to be most exquisitely auailable, to comfort and corroborate the queasie stomacks of *Courtiers*, to the end that without enfeebling their constitution of *Patients*, the poore vnfortunate wretches, may the more easily and speedily digest the bitter distastes, which so often and daily they are enforced to swallow and pocket vp in *Courts*.

They sell moreouer in certaine little viols of glasse, (of which *Ménante*, who writes these present newes, hath been so fortunate as to get one at a reasonable rate) *odoriferous humane sweat*, most admirable to perfume those, who with the fragrancie of Muske and Ciuetts of honourable labours will endeuour with pen in hand to appeare and ranke themselves among learned men.

The said *warehouse* hath also great dispatch of a kinde of *Penids*, made of most fine *pasto-royall*, very excellent to whet and stir vp the appetite of certaine wilfull sowre *Stoicks*, to the end, that with an insatiate greedinesse, they may know how to eat and feed on those loathsome dishes of this world, which albeit they recoyle and prouoke vomit in some, and are wholly repugnant vnto the taste and stomacke of good men, neuertheless there be some, who because they will not purchase the displeasure of great men, and so overthrow their

their owne affaires by pulling an old house on their heads, are forced to make shew and pretence, that they greedily desire them, and with hungry rauenessesse deuoure them.

There are besides to be seene in that shop certaine great boxes full of *Musk-comfits*, very excellent to make the breath of those *Secretaries*, *Priny Counsellors*, or *Senators* in *Common-wealths* (who are bound to let secrets putrifie in their bodies) to yeeld a sweet sauour.

Then in a back-roome and seuerall *Magazin*, they sell certaine horse-pasterns or fetters, made of the iron of considerable maturitie, which, though by some foolish kinde of men, they be scorned and reiected as implements for beasts, the wiser and more warie haue lately brought them into so great credit, as they are daily bought vp at an excessiue price by those precipitate and foole-hardie wits, that fearing, or scorning the iudicious maturitie of the ordinarie Carier, take pleasure rashly, and hand-ouer-head to addresse and compasse all their affaires by *Posts and Curriers*.

But no other merchandise of that rich *warehouse* hath lately had greater vtterance, than certaine *Fann's*, made, not of the feathers of *Ostriges*, of *Peacocks*, or of any other gay-coloured bird, but of herbs and flowers. And because *Mr. Andrea Mathioli*, the *Delphick Herbalist*, hath among those flowers and herbs found and knowne the drearie and infernall weed, *Wolues-bane*, the warie and fore-seeing vertuous *Inhabitants of Parnassus*, haue euidently discovered, that those mysterious *Fann's*, serue not to make wind in the heat of summer, but to rid and driue away from mens noses those importunate flies, which certaine ill-aduised and vn-heedie spirits, hauing gone about to remoue, by hitting them with their daggers, haue shamefully slit and cut their owne noses.

## 8 *The New-found Politicke.*

---

*The most soueraigne vertue Fidelitie, being secretly fled from Parnassus, Apollo hauing discovered where shee had hidden her selfe, disspatcheth the two most excellent Muses, Melpomene and Thalia, to perswade her to returne.*

Rag. II. I Part.

---

**T**HE Royall Palace of the soueraigne vertue *Fidelitie*, which whilome was so frequented by the chiefeft and most eminent *Officers of Princes*, and by an infinite number of Senators of the most renowned Common-wealths, is of late so little haunted, that it seemeth to be the house of desolation. Whereupon, on the 18. day of this present moneth, the honourable mansion of so excelsse a vertue was seene to be cleane shut vp. *Apollo* was no sooner aduertised of so important a case, but he commanded, that the gate of her famous Palace, should with violence be laid open; and that from the *Ladie Fidelitie* herselfe, they should vnderstand the true occasion of so strange a noueltie. His *Maiesties* behest was forthwith put in execution, and they, who most exactly searched each corner of the Royall Palace, found no creature therein, which the vertuous *Inhabitants of Parnassus* vnderstanding, they presently put themselves into mourning weeds, sprinkled themselves with ashes, and shewed diuers other signes of sad sorrow: yea and *Apollo* himselfe in particular did so grievously condole, that all the Court might evidently perceine in him those very same effects of inward sorrow, which he publikely made demonstration of, at what time the wailefull and deplorable disaster befell his vnfortunate *Sonne Phaeton*.



*Phaeton.* His Maiestie well knowing, that the gouernment of *Mankind* would goe to wrack, if the solide foundation, which vpholdeth all this worlds machine, should faile, caused presently certaine *Edicts* to be proclaimed, wherein (both to the ignorant, and to all others incapable of the most noble prerogatiue, to liue with honourable fame and good report in the memory of men) he freely granted a hundred yeares of immortallitie, to be deliuered him so soone as he should finde out, where that famous vertue had hidden herselfe.

And to assure the payment promised, the *Royall Exchequer-Chamber* deliuered bills of exchange, and letters of assignation, signed by *Homer*, by *Virgil*, by *Linie*, and by most wealthy *Tacitus*; all of them principall and most eminent *Merchants* in the *Faerie of Parnassus*, amongst those vertuous men, who with their praise-worthy studies, wholly apply themselves to the right noble and honest traffique, to eternize others names in the memorie of all Nations. The greatnesse of the promised reward inuited diuers to goe seeke her out. And after much pursuit and exact diligence, the *Royall Maiestie Fidelitie* was found in a stable, lying among the *Hounds* and *Spaniels* belonging to the famous hunter *Alceon*, and of most lovely *Adonis*.

*Apollo* being in all possible haste aduertised of so strange a noueltie, did immediatly send thither the two *Soueraigne Muscs*, *Melpomene* and *Thalia*, to the end that remouing so excellent a *Vertue* from so vile and loathsome a place, they should reconduct her to her wonted habitation. But all endeouours proued vaine: for that glorious *Princesse*, bitterly bewailing her disastrous condition, cried out, *Oh you Sacred Dieties*, relate vnto my *Soueraigne good Lord Apollo* from me, that my eternall and most capitall enemy *Frane*, hath at last obtained a compleat victorie, touching the con-  
trouersie, that shee hath euer had with me: And how that infamous *Interesse*, who in these dismall daies, tyrannizeth  
ouer the minds of all the best Nations, hath rigorously ban-  
ished



# 10 *The New-found Politicke.*

nished me from out the hearts of men, which in former times were wholly mine.

Let his *Majestie* likewise vnderstand, that the whole Vniuerse is so deeply plunged in the filthy mud of all abominable and brutish pollutions, that the constant *Fidelitie*, honourably and faithfully to serue her Lord or Prince, euen to the effusion of the last drop of her heart-bloud, and to the emission of the last gasps of life, which erst was so admired, and ambitiously sought after, is now adaiies repured no better, than a foolish and hare-brain'd obstinacie. And tell him moreouer, that if a man (so he may accomodate and fit himselfe to all times to all places, and to all persons) haue a fraudulent heart, full-fraught with perfidioustrechery, and readily disposed, to exercise whatsoeuer execrable *Infidelity*, or damnable periurie; the same is now adaiies commended and extolled, to be wisdom, sagacitie, and warinesse of an all-comprehending and reaching wit. And tell him, that I, a poore abiect creature, glutted, and euen tyred to see so filthie and opprobrious things, am inforced to imbrace the resolution (as you see) to liue among these dogs, in whom I now finde that true *Fidelitie*, which with so much toyle-some carke, I haue euer laboured, and wearied my selfe to insert and plant in the perfidious and interested hearts of all men.

---

Apollo

---

Apollo perceiuing the great disorders, that the flight of the sacred vertue *Fidelitie*, bred in all Mankind, by the mediation of the Soueraigne Muses, and of the sublime Heroike Vertues, obtaineth her returne into Parnassus.

Rag. 30. 1 Part.

**N**O tongue can fully expresse what anxietie and anguish *Apollo* fell into by the secret and sudden departure, which (as by our former Letters hath already beene signified) the excellent vertue *Fidelitie* (some weeks since) made from this state of *Parnassus*. For his *Majestie* could not possibly be at peace, or take any rest, to see the world deprived of so noble a *Princesse*. And his afflictions were daily increased by the foule disorders, which continually were heard to multiply in all Principalities, betwene the common people, and thrice-sacred *Amicitia* (the only exquisite delight of Mankind) who seeing her selfe forsaken by that precious vertue *Fidelitie*; and fearing to receive some notable affront by *Fraud*, absolutely denide to inhabit any longer in the hearts of men, who freed from the oath of *Fidelitie* or Allegiance, which indissolubly they owe vnto their Princes; and likewise loose from the bond of that sincere loue, with which they are fast tied vnto their private friends, became so fell in perfidiousnesse, so brutish in seditions, as making euery most detestable wickednesse to seeme lawfull; they with treacherie chased vnspotted Faithfulness from all humane societie, and with foule seditions, sacred Peace; defiling the whole world with bloud, and filled the same with most villanous Larcenies, and with all

12 *The New-found Politicke.*

manner of perfidious and execrable confusion. Besides, the iust grievances and complaints of Princes did continually molest *Apollo's* minde; which Princes did openly protest, that by the damnable infidelitie of their subiects, they were inforced to abandon the gouernance of Mankind: whereupon *Apollo*, to finde out some conuenient remedie against so notorious a mischiefe, thought it expedient to intimate the high *Court of Parliament* of all the generall Estates, against the twentieth of the last moneth, vnto which hee summoned the Poet-princes, and the Deputies of all vertuous Nations. All which being in great diligence appeared on the prefixed day, there were discouered in many people great hatreds against their Princes, all which protested openly, that not by the vice of Infidelitie, but vrged and euen compelled by desperation, they had for euer banished from out their hearts that Fidelitie, which, as most hurtfull and preiudiciall to them, they were resolutely determined neuer to acknowledge and re-admit: forsomuch as shee was most foulely abused by many Princes. And whereas in former times, the *Fidelitie* of Subiects, hauing euer serued as an instrument to induce Princes, to counterchange the awe and seruice of their people with gentle and courteous vsages, they now clearly perceiued, that the vertue of a base and prostrate obedience, was reputed but the basenesse of an absolute minde, and the merit of a voluntarie and vntainted faithfulnessse, a necessitie to serue; by reason of which manner of proceeding, publike mischiefes and disorders were vncontroledly gone so farre, that many people had beene compelled to vndertake the resolution, which the world now saw; onely to the end, that humorous and capricious Princes should come to the perfect knowledge, that the authoritie to sway and command may easily be lost, when the outrages, ingraticudes, and misusages, daily vsed towards subiects, hauing surmounted all humane patience, brought all nations (naturally inclined to dutifull obedience) euen vnto desperation; and neuer any more to liue in subiection of Masters; with an obstinate resolution, rather to wrack  
on.



on a free gouernment, than to be continually contemned, abused, flayed, hurried and molested vnder Principalities. Although the rage and disdain of Princes towards their subiects were great, and the distaste of the people greater, the soueraigne Muses neuerthelesse, with the assistance of the thrice-excellent heroick Vertues, who effectually laboured to bring a businesse of so great consequence to some good end, with the dexteritie of their wit, in the end they somewhat calmed and allwaged the minds of the angry Princes, and instigated the proud hearts of the enraged people: And the Court of Parlament was dissolued, with the capitulation of this atonement, that the people should solemnly vow and promise forthwith to readmit into their breasts the excellent vertue Fidelitie, which they should swear to make absolute Mistris of their hearts. And that Princes should be strictly bound, to banish and expell from out their hearts, Auarice and Crueltie; and in lieu of them, yeeld the free possession of their mindes vnto the Soueraigne Vertues, Liberalitie, Bountie, and Clemencie, who were they, that perpetually held Fidelitie and Obedience fast fettered in the hearts of subiects: Since that by an autenticall testimonie, subscribed by *Caius Plinius*, and other naturall Historians, it most evidently appeared, that the sillie sheepe, who are seene so gently and willingly to obey their shepherds, doe notwithstanding shun and abhor all Butchers. And that it was impossible to induce Dogs (although naturally most trusty, louing, and kinde to their masters) to wag their taile, or to leape, and faune on those, that gaue them more stripes than morsels of bread.



Iustus Lipsius, to make amends for the fault hee had committed in accusing of Tacitus, doth so passionately obserue him, that before Apollo he is charged to idolatrize him: whereupon after a faigned, and but verball punishment, hee is in the end by his Maiestie, not only absolved, but highly commended and admired.

Rag. 86. 1 Part.

**T**HE most curious learned of this State, haue often obserued, that whensoever any vertuous man, doth through humane frailty commit any oversight, for the dread wh he afterward feelth of wicked actions, doth in such sort (with falling into the other extreame) correct the same, that some there be who affirme, that *Democritus* did not so much for the benefit of contemplation, pull out his owne eyes, as for to make amends for the error hee had committed, laciuiously gazing vpon a most beaurious Damsell, than beleeued a Philosopher of his ranke and profession. And the report yet goeth among the vertuous, that *Harpocrates*, to correct the defect of ouermuch babling, for which he was greatly blamed at a great banquet, fell into the other extreame, neuer to speake more: Nor ought the sentence of the Poet be accounted true,

*Dum vitant stulti vitia, in contraria currunt.*

Since that, in a Dog that hath once bin scalded with boiling water, it is held a point of sagacitie, to keepe himselfe in his kennell when it raineth. As likewise it is the part of a wary man to auoid Eccles, if hee haue once bene deadly bitten by Snakes.

This we say, for so much as so great was the griefe, and so notorious the agonie, that *Iustus Lipsius* felt for the accusation, which he so unhappily framed and published against *Tacitus*, that to repaire the fault, which of all the vertuous of this *State* was exceedingly blamed, not long after fell in to that error, and went in person to visit *Tacitus*, and for the iniury which he acknowledged to have done him, hee most humbly begged pardon at his hands.

*Tacitus* knowing what reputation the readinesse of a free and genuine pardon yeeldeth a man, with a magnanimity worthy a *Romane Senator*, not only frankly and generously forgave *Lipsius* the iniury received, but (which by the unanimous report of all the vertuous of this *State* hath deserved highest commendations) he most affectionately thanked him for the occasion he ministred vnto him, to make purchase of that glory, which sincerely to forget all inurious affronts received, doth procure and conferre vpon a man, vnto the ancient and most affectionate deuotion, which *Lipsius* (who had euer bin most partially affected vnto *Tacitus*) had euer borne vnto so sublime an *Historian*; the wonder of so great indulgence being adioyned, and the facility of a pardon so earnestly desired, did so encrease the loue in his minde, and so augment his awfull veneration towards him, that hee more frequented *Tacitus* his house than his owne.

Hee now loued to discourse with no other learned man: no conuersation did more agrade him: he commended no other *Historian*: and all with such partiality of inward affection, namely, for the elegancie of his speech, adorned more with choise conceits, than with words; for the succinctnesse of his dote, neruous, and graue sententious Oratorie, cleare onely to those of best vnderstanding, with the enuy and hatred of other vertuous men of this dominion, dependents of *Cicero*, and of the mighty *Cesarean* faction, who approue it not. And did with such diligence labour to imitate him, that not onely with hatefull anonomasia, hee dared to call him his *Auctor*, but vtterly scorning all other mens detestations, he affected no other ambition, than to appeare vnto the world a new *Tacitus*.

This

## 16 *The New-found Politicke.*

This so vnwonted kindnesse among friends, neuer scene from inferiours towards their superiours, and which exceeded the most hearty loue or affection that any can beare and expresse to the nearest of his blood, engendred such a ieaousie in the minds of *Mercerus*, of *Beatus*, *Rhenanus*, of *Fulsius Orsinus*, of *Marcus Antonius Muretus*; and of diuers others, followers and louers of *Tacitus*, that, induced thereunto by meere enuy, hatched in their hearts (but according to the custome of worldly dissemblers, which is, to paliate the passion of priuate hatred with the robe of charity toward their neighbour) vnder colour to reuenge the iniury, which not long since *Lipsius* had done vnto their friend *Tacitus*, they framed an enditement against *Lipsius*, and presented the same vnto *Apollo*, charging him with the same delict or crime of impiety, whereof he had accused *Tacitus*, giuing his Maiestie to vnderstand, that hee loued not *Tacitus* as a friend, that he honoured not him as a Master, and regardfull Patron, but adored him as his *Apollo* and *Deitie*. This accusation, which as in crimes of capitall treason, by reason of it's hainous outragiousnesse, needeth no other prooffe than the bare testimony of any one man, did enter so deeply into *Apollo's* minde, as hee deemed himselfe offended by *Lipsius* in the highest degree, caused him forthwith to bee brought before his Maiestie, by the Pretorian band of the *Lyriack Poets*, fast bound in chaines and gyues; and staring on him with a fierce wrathfull countenance, and with death-threatening gestures, demanded of him, What his genuine opinion or conceit was of a certaine fellow, called *Cornelius Tacitus*, borne of an oyle-monger of *Terni*.

*Lipsius* vndismayedly answered *Apollo*, That hee deemed *Tacitus* to be the chiefe Standard-bearer of all famous *Historians*, the Father of humane wisdom, the Oracle of perfect reason of *State*, the absolute Master of *Politicians*, the stone *Coriphens* of those writers that haue attained the glory in all their compositions, to vse more conceits than words; the perfect and absolute forme to learne to write the actions of great *Princes*, with the learned & apparent light of the essentiall



tiall source and occasion of them: a most exquisite artifice, and which was onely vnderstood by the sublimest master of the Histerian Art, as that which greatly yeelded him glorious, that knew how to manage it, and him truly learned that had the iudgment duly to consider the same; the perfect *Idea of Historicall veritie*; the true *Doctor of Princes*; the *Pedagogue of Courtiers*; the superfine paragon, on which the world might try the alloy of the *Genius of Princes*; the iust Scale, with w<sup>ch</sup> any man might exactly weigh the true worth of priuate men; the Volume which those Princes should euer haue in their hands, that desire to learne the skill and knowledge absolutely to command: as likewise those subiects, who wished to possesse the science dutifully and rightly to obey.

By this so affected *Encomium*, and by so earnestly exaggerated commendations, *Apollo* easily perceiued, and came to know, that *Lipsius* did manifestly idolatrize *Tacitus*, wherupon in minde enraged thus he bespake him.

In what esteeme wilt thou then (Oh *Lipsius*) haue mee, that am the father of all good letters, soueraigne Lord of the Sciences, absolute Prince of the liberall Arts, Monarke of all vertues, if with such impiety and shamelesse impudency, thou doest idolatrize a Writer, so hatefull vnto all good men? and an author so detestable vnto the professors of the Latinetongue, both for the nouelty of his phrase, for the obstruse obscurity of his speech, for the vicious breuity of his discourses, & for the cruell and tyrannous politicall doctrine which he teacheth? by, and with which, he rather frameth cruell Tyrants, than iust Princes; rather wicked and depraued Subiects, than endowed with that vntainted probity, which so greatly auaiileth, and facilitates in Princes the way how to gouerne their states mildly and vprightly. It being most apparent, that with his impious documents, and abominable precepts, he peruerteth lawfull Princes into cruell Tyrants, he transformeth natural Subiects (which should be as milde and harmelesse Sheep) into most pernicious Foxes: and from creatures, whom our common mother Nature, with admirable wisdome hath created toothlesse and hornelless, he conuerteth them into rauenous Wolues, and vntamed Bulls.

D

Who



Who sheweth himselfe a slye cunning Doctor of false simulations, the only subtile artificer of treacherous tyrannies, a new *Xenophon* of a most cruell and execrable *Tiberipedia*, the wily forger of the euer to be detested mystery, how leeringly to smile and therewith deceiue, how with facility to vtter and affirme that which a man neuer meaneth or intends, effectually to perswade that which one beleeueth not, instantly to craue that which one desireth not, and to seeme to hate that which one loueth; who is a sublime *Pedagogue* to instruct others in that most villanous doctrine to smother and suppress the conceits and meanings of a true-meaning heart, and yet to speake with a false-lying tongue: the ingenious Architect of fallacies and deceits, and so singular and excellent an author of rash and fond-hardy iudgments, that he hath often most shamefully attributed holy interpretations to most impious and to bee abhorred actions: And on the other side, hath cannonized sacred ones as Diabolicall.

And wilt thou (Oh *Lipsius*) among so many my liege and trusty vertuous men, euen before my face, adore and worship as thy *God*, a man that in all his compositions hath manifestly declared, that he hath not knowne *God*?

Who being composed of nought but impiety, hath sowed and scattered through the wide world, that cruell, prodigious, and desperate policy, which so infinitely defameth those Princes that make vse of it, and so deeply afflicteth the people that feele it; who as well to Princes as to priuate men, hath taught the cursed way, and mischieuous fashion, how to conuerse and proceed with false doublenesse; and the treacherous Art, to doe that which a man saies not, and to say that which one meaneth not.

A way which by some is practised onely to become skillfull in that abominable doctrine, how with the pensill of false pretences, to pourtray blacke for white; to circumwinde the simpler sort of people with the fallacies of faire sugred words, and of lewd and wicked deeds; to deceiue all men with vsing laughter in anger, and weeping in ioy; and

and onely by and with the pernicious compasse of priuate interesse, to measure loue, hate, trust, faith, honestie, and each humane or morall vertue, read and perused by good men, onely to come to the knowledge of the new and hidden tricks and artifices, with which, in these daies, wretched mankind with so euident calamitie, is most miserably circumgired, and tossed to and fro: and to discover the most execrable hypocrisie, that diuers followers of so wicked an Art haue vsed and practised, to bee by the simpler sort of people reputed for men of vpright conuersation, and honest life; albeit, for to obserue and obey the rules of *Tacitus*, they act, and daily perpetrate deeds, that by the vglyest Diuels of hell, are deemed most abhominable.

Perceiuest thou not (Oh *Lipsius*) since the Volumes of this thy *Tacitus* haue past the hands of all people, diuers Princes haue straid and elonged themselves from the ancient course, to gouerne their subiects with humanity, mildnesse, and clemency: and what an infinite number are now cleane parted & diuorced from the genuine plainnesse and singlenesse of a truly-vertuous life?

Know *Lipsius*, that so great a part of *Tacitus* his workes (as some simple and shallow-brain'd men doe affirme) were not lost in the violent deluges of the barbarous Nations, which with so rapid inundations passed into Italy, to ouer-runne and subdue it, for they miscaried, and were lost before so great ruines; not through the ignorance of the people, who in those turbulent and embroiled times, were continually busied in the exercise of armes, but because those yet vntainted ancient Nations, in which reigned equally the well-meaning simplicity of minde and heart, and the purity of the then new budding *Christian Religion*, abhorred that Author whom some ill aduised doe now so much loue and cherish, that (as I perceiue thy selfe hast done) many and diuers evidently idolatrizing him, haue created him for their golden Calfe. *Tacitus* is in euery part of his most vnworthy to be read of good or honest men, for so much as the villanies, and the impieties contained in his workes, doe far ex-

ceed in number his leaues, his lines, his words, his sillables, and his letters. But by the life of *Tiberius*, which hee hath compiled, a Prince futable and worthy the genius of such an Historian, all must acknowledge the same to bee most intolerable and damnable; the which for a singular benefit of all mankind, hauing for many ages lyen secretly hidden in the most secret and concealed parts of Germany, through the pestiferous and diabolicall curiositie of a Germane, more dreary and farall to all the world than his Compatriate, that was the first inuented the deadly and dismall Bombard, whence it was drawne forth, at what time that most noble Prouince began to be infected by the moderne heresie; onely to the end, that with so horrid a prodigie, at the same time that execrable *Luther* began to molest and subuert the sacred rites, wicked *Tacitus* should embroile the prophane. Compositions in the highest degree most wicked and pernicious, which for many yeares were lost, because they pleased not antiquity; and are now, to the great shame and reproach of this age, admired of those *Politicians*, who being followers of such impieties, haue most compleatly learn'd from the Master of fallacies and tromparies, the doctrine to know, how to the vtmost of amansage, to entertainemen with faire words, to feed them with smoake, to fill them with winde, and with vaine-vaine hopes fairly to lead them to extreame beggery.

A doctrine most assuredly infernall, which by *Tacitus* the the inuentor and husband thereof, hauing beene sowne and dispersed abroad, onely for the benefit of Princes, is now a daies scene to be imbraced and cherished with such insatiate greedinesse, by priuate and meane subiects, that *Tacitus*, who was herefore an Author held onely worthy of Princes, doth now so publikely passe from hand to hand among all men, that euen Shop-keepers, sachieus and base porters shew not the selues more cunning in any profession than of State policy, to the great contempt and derision of an Art held in highest regard and reputation of great men, the whole vniuerse is scene to swarme, and to be full of sharking and spoil-trade Politicians.

At



At these irefull and exorbitant speeches of *Apollo*, *Lipsius* stood amazed, as one halfe dead and distracted, yet notwithstanding, euen in the vtmost abashment and consternation of minde, pulling vp a good heart, and taking breath, most submissiuely begged pardon of his Maiestie for any fault hee might haue committed; then boldly told him, that such and so infinite were his awfull obligations towards his beloued *Tacitus*, and so great was the honour, which among his Countrymen the *Flemings*, the *English*, the *Germans*, the *French*, the *Italians*, and the *Spaniards*, his bosome-minion, and most dearly beloued Author *Tacitus* had purchased him, whom though he acknowledged to loue most entirely, and to honour as his terrestriall God; yet, to attaine vnto a superlative degree of due satisfaction of his bounden duty, and with exactnesse to accomplish the duty of true gratitude, he thought all he could doe to be nothing, in respect of his vnualuable merits.

His reason was, that hauing published and left vnto the world, diuers ordinary labours and compositions, his onely workes vpon *Tacitus* were they, that had made him to merit an abode and mansion in *Pernassus*, and an honourable and immortall renowne among many Nations: and that if he, who with other mens money exercised the trafficke of trading and rich merchandizing, was easily pardoned his error, if hee did euen worship and adore him, that at his pleasure might make him breake and turne begger: How much more then did he deserue of his Maiestie to be, if not commended, yet at least excused, if in louing and honouring his deare dearest *Tacitus*, he exceeded all bounds of duty, of decorum, or of dignity, sithence in & vpon him only was grounded the whole fabricke of all the credit and estimation that he had purchased among the vertuous. And that hee, euer since his first ingresse into *Pernassus*, had of all the learned bin so beloued, cherished, courted, and reuerenced, that his house was no other wise frequented, then that of the most famous writers.

But that after hee fell into the error to make *Tacitus* his  
 D 3 enemy

## 22 *The New-found Politicke.*

enemie, *statim relictum illius limen, nemo adire, nemo solari*: and therefore rather than hee would any whit diminish his veneration, and awfull respect toward that prime Author of his, he was well pleased to hate himselfe, and to lose his life, deeming the losse of the same farre lesse, than the greatnesse of the same, vnto which by meanes of *Tacitus* he had attained.

So highly did these words of *Lipsius* offend *Apollo's* mind, that more and more enraged with fierce wrath, he vehemently complained, that euen before his awfull presence with so impudent asseueration, hee had rather manifestly made demonstration of a wilfull stubbornnesse to perseuere in his stiffe opinion of so hainous an excelsse, than humilitie to yeeld vnto penitence, and for his fault to craue pardon. And about any other demerit of so obstinate a man, his *Maiestie* could by no meanes endure, that he had entitiled the impiery of *Idolatry*, with the stile of honourable gratitude; and wilfull obstinacie, with the title of a constant and vncorrupted truth.

Whereupon he suddenly commanded the foresaid Cohort of the Lyricke Poets, presently to drag him out of his presence, as one most vnworthy to looke his *Maiestie* in the face, whom he had so capitally offended to the quicke.

And that hauing stripped him of such good letters as he possessed, they should publicly proclaime him to be a most shamelesse ignorant Ass; and after burne him aliue, as a most wicked and detestable idolater.

Forthwith was poore *Lipsius* brought, and haled vnto the place of so great infamie, where his friends most earnestly perswaded him to aduise himselfe, and at once, humbly suing for mercy at his *Maiesties* hands, endeauour to saue both his life and reputation.

In the very moment of desperation of so horrible and lamentable a plunge, it was manifestly perceiued, that at the apprehension thereof, there appeared in *Lipsius* such an vndanted constancie, and an vndismaid boldnesse of a courageous minde against the terrors of death, that he thus answered *Apollo*.

And

And let his will be done : for, he cannot die ignorant, that can perfectly demonstrate to possesse Gratitude, which is the *Soueraigne Queene* of all humane vertues.

And therefore, the flames that were prepared to consume him, would yeeld a farre brighter splendor of Glory, than of Fire : and that euen in the last instant of his dying- life, he solemnly protested, that he would in no wise acknowledge the crime wherewith he was charged, to haue ouer-much loued or superstitiously honoured his beloved *Tacitus* to be true. And that by reason of the infinite bonds, wherewith he stood tied vnto him, and for the respectfull loue he bare him ; the griefe and molestation that he felt in remembring, that hee died vngratefull vnto him, did more excruciate and torment him, than the rigor or paines of death : and that the agony, in which they all saw him, proceeded not from the fright or terror hee felt, that hee must die, but from the inward pangs, and hearts griefe, which vexed him, in as much, that he had heard his *Maiestie*, name and pronounce *Tacitus*, to be a wicked *Atheist*. An iniurie, which had it beene vttered of so excellent and wise an Author by any other man whatsoever, then by his sacred *Maiestie* (euen in that last gaspe of life) he would neuer haue left it vnreuedged, at least with the weapons of his tongue. And that with the same liberrie, which is so proper vnto such as care not to liue, hee made it knowne vnto all men, that the reall truth was, that *Tacitus* had so much knowledge of *God*, that he alone, among all the Heathen Writers, with his profound and exact knowledge, hauing attained perfectly to know of what worth and efficacie (touching matters of Religion) faith is of those things, which are not seene, or cannot by humane reason be proued, had boldly said, *Sanctiusque ac reuerentius visum de actis Deorum credere, quam scire* : Words most sacred, and well worthy to be considered by those Diuines, who in their writings had lost themselues in their Sophisticall subtilities, and Logicall nicities.

*Apollo* hauing heard these things, as one possessed with wonderment, and full of admiration, presently caused *Lipsius*



## 24 *The New-found Politicke.*

to be loosed, and most affectionately embracing him, he thus bespake him; Oh my dearly beloued and vertuous *Lipsius*, with what comfort to me, and auaillefull gaine to thee, haue I tempted thy patience, and made triall of thy most vertuous constancie? And by the bitter detractions, which I haue vttered against *Tacitus*, which are but those with which they accuse him, that either neuer reade him, or vnderstand him not, I haue thoroughly made prooffe of thy zealous deuotion towards that most excellent Historian, whom I decme worthy my regardfull admiration.

And by that, which I haue now heard from thee, I doe evidently perceiue, that thou hast read him with delight, studied him with profit, and learnt him to thy great aduantage; for I know that the stout defence, which to thy immortall glory, thou hast made in his behalfe, is not thine owne, but drawne from thine and mine *Tacitus*.

This said and done, *Apollo* turned himselfe towards the vertuous, who for curiositie, and to heare the successe of that great accident, were in great troupes flocked into the Hall, he thus said vnto them:

*Oh you my entirely beloued vertuous learned men*, admire and perpetually imitate the renowned constancie of this my glorious vertuous *Lipsius*, and let the infinite dilection and sempiternall veneration of that *Prince*, be eternally imprinted in your hearts, who strongly supporteth your reputation: And neuer forget that the credit and power of him, who loseth the good grace and fauour of his *Prince*, doth more easily ruine, and precipitate, than doe the houses, whose foundations faile and decay. And therefore, you that follow *Princes Courts*, learne to know, that *Nihil rerum mortalium tam instabile, ac fluxum est, quam fama potentie non sua vi nixa.* A most assured document, which teacheth all men, both in louing, in honouring, and in perpetually seruing their *Princes* with a most constant trust, and stedfast faith to imitate my *Lipsius*. For, euen as in sacred mysteries and holy rites, it is an vn pardonable and grosse impiety, to haue or acknowledge any other God, than him, who hath created Man, the  
Heauens

Heauens, and the Earth : So should you neuer admit into your hearts any other deuotion of *Princes*, nor at no time expect commoditie, or wish for preferment, except from that *Lord*, who by the trust and confidence, which he repositeth in your trust and fidelitie, by the extraordinary affection which he beareth vnto you, makes you to be knowne to all the world, not as his seruants, but as his deare friends. And by the supreme and vncontrolled authority, which he suffereth you to exercise in his dominions, causeth you to appeare and seeme vnto his other subiects (euen as himselfe is ) so many *Princes*.

And for so much as the great wittinesse and sagacity of *Princes*, by reason of the great ieaiousies and diffidences, that accompany those, who sway and raigne, is commonly accompanied by suspicion, and fauourites or Minions in *Courts*, being euer aggrauated by enuy, euer pried into, and obserued by emulous competitors, and euer persecuted by the malicious or enuious ; to the end you may the more successfully ouercome so many difficulties, and may euer prosperously maintaine your selues in the states and honours which you haue acquired ; loue your *Princes* with all your hearts, obserue them with all your best affections, and euermore serue them with all possible faithfulness and sinceritie.

And rather, then so much as to thinke, much lesse to doe any thing, that may bring with it the least-least danger to diminish one iot of their good fauour ( as my *Lipsius* hath done) chuse to yeeld vnto death.

And beleue confidently, that then beginneth your downfall, when by some farall mischiefe of yours, you suffer your selues to be perswaded or entangled, that you may better or aduantage the condition of your seruice, with, and by vsing with your *Princes* ( who know so much, see so much, vnderstand so much, and obserue sa much, as more cannot possibly be knowne, seene, vnderstood, or obserued) simulation to seeme that, which one is not ; the falshood at once to smile and deceiue : all double dealing, and to chew

with both chaps: all cloging dissimulation in stradling ouer ditches, the better to be able (if euer his *Prince* should fall into some disafter) to take part with the Conquerour.

For, *Princes*, who, suppose they know not so much, yet haue they euer so many whisperers about them, as one or other will bring them in tune. And when they sleepe, they are neuer destitute of wicked Spirits to keepe them awake.

So that, they, who thinke it safe, and dangerlesse, to liue and hold out long with falshood and dissimulation, may rightly be compared vnto those fooles, that vnderake to cant *Gipsies*, to cheat cozeners, or that hope to sell false balls vnto Mountibankes.

*The chiefeſt learned men of Parnassus are ſutors vnto Apollo; to enioyne Tacitus, to recompile thoſe bookes of his Annales and Hiſtories, which are loſt.*

Rag. 84. 1. Part.

**Y**Eſter-day the chiefeſt learned men of this State of *Parnassus* met together in the common Colledge-hall, where after diuers long diſcourſes paſt between them, they with one accord preſented themſelues before *Apollo's* Maieſtie, vnto whom *Petrus Victorius*, a great learned man of *Florence*, in the name of all the reſt, ſaid, That thoſe vertuous men, whom his Maieſtie beheld, did moſt humbly beg a fauour at his hands, the moſt gracious, that euer hee could conſerre vpon his learned followers, who with continuall brackiſh teares bewailed the diſaſtrous loſſe of the *Annales* and *Hiſtories* of *Cornelius Tacitus*; the father of humane wiſdome, and true inuentor of moderne *Politie*, did moſt humbly coniure him, to command that excellent man



man to repaire the damages, which the iniury of times had caused, both to his reputation, and to the generall commoditie of his vertuous followers, by framing all that anew, which at this day is wanting in his most excellent workes. At this request, which seemed both vertuous and reasonable, contrary to the opinion of all men, his *Maiestie* was much offended, and with manifest alteration of minde, he framed this answer: Oh you my ignorantly-learned friends, doth it not then seeme vnto you, that the Princes of this world are already ouer-cunning Statists, but that you wish them to be more perfect Doctors in that Science, in which for your last misery, they offend in being ouer-skilfull in the same? Since some of them with the practise of one truly Diabolicall and infernall Reason of State; it euidently appeareth, that they haue brought both Sacred and prophane things into a manifest confusion: Haue not as yet the common miseries of so many scandals, which by the harsh and wrested gouernment of some Princes, are scene to arise in the world, opened your eyes so wide, as you may perceiue and know, that all moderne Policie is but the trash of your so beloued *Tacitus*, and as a contagious disease hath infected all the world?

Are you not yet come to the knowledge, that the now present Reason of State, with which a number of people are rather flead than shorne; rather suckt drie, than milked; and rather oppressed, than gouerned. A thing in it selfe so exorbitant, it is meere ignorance to desire the same to be more violent? And doth it not seeme vnto you, that from the cruell gouernment of *Tiberius*, and from the prodigious life of *Nero*, so exactly written by your *Tacitus*, some moderne Princes haue drawne most exquisite precepts, how to gnaw to the bone, and how to shauet to the braine? But that you would also haue them to haue the conueniencie, to see whether in the liues of *Caligula* and *Domitianus*, which to the end that the lothsome obscenities, and the barbarous cruelties, which those two vgly monsters of Nature committed, should for euer lye hidden: the *Maiesty* of the eternall God, for your incomparable benefit, hath exterminated from out

## 28 *The New-found Politicke.*

the world, they might draw some secret precept, to make the fifth Act of the wofull and dismall Tragedie more funerrall and wailefull. A happie aud beneficiall gaine (oh you vertuous) for the whole world, hath the losse beene of the greatest part of *Tacitus* his labours.

Oh how fortunate might men be reputed, if likewise those fatall reliques, which for the last calamitie of mankind are left vnto vs, were also lost for euer. And that the world were gouerned with the modestie and simplicitie of the ancient Monarkes, who esteemed men as reasonable creatures, and not with the bitterneesse of diuers moderne Princes, who manifestly seeme to belecue, that they are but two-footed beasts, so created of *God* only for their benefit: euen as his Diuine *Maiesty*, to no other end caused the earth to produce Mice, but to fatten Cats. But you Sir *Peter Victorius*, since I see, that you also are of the number of those good men, that with *Tacitus* were entire; be pleased that I speake a few words with you in priuate, since you haue spoken in behalfe of the publike.

Doe you not thinke, that your Princes with the only first lease of the *Annales* of *Tacitus*, which they so diligently studie, and know so well to put in actuall practise, are become so skilfull Medices to cure the canker of the sedicious *Florentine* people? Thrice happie were all the world, if *Tacitus* had euer held his peace.

Therefore get you gone in the name of *God*, together with the rabble of your learned Copes-mates; for my very heart is ready to burst, to see that men likewise are borne with the unhappie calamitie of Thrushes.

---

Cornelius

Cornelius Tacitus, for some complaints vrged against him by diuers great Princes, by reason of certaine politicall spectacles, which he hath deuised, most preiudiciall vnto their gouernment, hauing beene emprisoned, is by Apollo set at libertie.

Rag. 7. 2. Part.

**T**He apprehending of the person of *Cornelius Tacitus*, which happened the last night by the expresse commandement of the *Lords Censors*, hath caused great amazement throughout all the Vniuersitie of the learned men; being a man so remarkable in *Parnassus*, so deare vnto *Apollo*, prime Counsellor of State, chiefe Chronicler, and his *Masestes* Master of Sentences. It was presently diuulged, that this hath happened by reason of some complaints exhibited against him by certaine most potent Princes, who haue grievously complained and aggrauated, that *Tacitus* with the seditious argument of his *Annals*, and of his *Histories*, hath framed a kinde of spectacles, that work most pernicious effects for Princes, for so much as being put vpon the noses of silly and simple people, they so refine and sharpen their sight, as they make them see and pric into the most hidden and secret thoughts of others, yea euen into the centre of their hearts: and they protest, that they nor can, nor will euer by any meanes endure they should make apparent demonstration vnto all men of the pure essence and qualitie of the mindes and purposes of Princes, what they are inwardly, and not what with their trickes and artifices (necessary for to rule and raigne) they endeuour to appeare outwardly.



## 30 *The New-found Politicke.*

outwardly. Yesterday morning the Attorney Generall of the greatest Monarks, now resident in *Parnassus*, appeared before the right honourable Lords Censors, among whom, in regard of the reputation of *Tacitus* his person, who was to be arraigned and adiudged, *Apello* himselfe came and sate among them.

This Aduocate or Attorney Generall with exaggerated words gaue them to vnderstand, that it was full well known to all the best vnderstanders of State-matters, that for the peace and tranquillitie of kingdoms, Princes are often compelled to commit actions not greatly to be commended, which (to maintaine themselves in the peoples opinion, to be honest and vpright Princes, in which conceit, hee that reigneth must necessarily labour, and endeuour to keepe himselfe) they were wont to shadow and blanch ouer with the specious and precious pretexts of an holy and vndefiled intention, and of an honest, hearty, and affectionate zeale towards the common good. All which tricks, deuices, and artifices, they can no longer put in practise or make vse of, if the true sense or meaning of their designs shall at any time come to the knowledge of the vulgar.

And that if it were possible, that the people (without being subiect to others Empirie) might be gouerned of themselves, then would Princes most willingly renounce the Royall titles, and authoritie of commanding; forsomuch as they are now fully resolved, that Kingdoms and Principalities are but insupportable burdens, subiects full-fraught with crabbed difficulties, and of so infinite dangers, as at their owne richly-sumptuous tables (so much enuied them by Gluttons and greedy Gourmands) they should neuer taste morsell, that would not relish of Arsenike. But if experience had made the world to know, that the sway and gouernment of Humane-kinde, without the presence of a wise and Politicke Prince, to rule and direct the same, would ere long be filled and ouer-run with wailfull and tragicall confusions.

It is likewise conuenient, that all these iust and lawfull  
meanes

meanes be granted them as are requisite and behouefull vprightly to gouerne their subiects: For, if to manure and till the fields, the Husbandman is not denide to haue his oxen, his plough, and his mattock: If the Taylor (to cut out and sew his garment) haue allowed him, both needle, thimble, and sheares; and the Smith, his hammer and his tongs; why shall Monarchs be depriued of meanes, and barred of power, hereafter to cast dust in their subiects eyes, which is the readiest benefit, the most excellent, and necessariest instrument, that euer any Politician could inuent, or finde in all the volume of State-reason (though most excellent) rightly to gouerne Empires? All which things, Princes (by reason of the seditious inuention of *Tacitus*) could no longer effect, or bring to passe: it being most euident, that the Diabolicall Spectacles, framed by that euer-factionous and seditious man, besides the first qualitie (as hath beene said, to subtilize and sharpen the sight of the vulgar people) they produce also a second most pernicious effect, that is, to be so well and sirly fastned to the noses of all men, as it is no longer possible for Princes, (as heretofore they haue done, with no lesse facilitie, than profit to themselves) to cast dust into their subiects eyes, though it were of the most artificiall, and superfinest, that possibly could be, without plainly discouering, that they are cheated, cozened and deceiued.

The complaints and grieuances of the Monarchies seemed most true both to *Apollo*, and to the venerable Colledge of the Censors. And therefore they deemed them worthy to be maturely considered.

Now by the long discourses and debatements, that passed among them, concerning a businesse of so great consequence, it seemed, that their opinion was likely to preuaile, who censured, that *Tacitus*, together with his scandalous *Annales*, and his seditious *Histories*, should for euer be expulsed the society and conuersation of all men.

But his Maiestie, vnwilling so much to vilifie or embase the Prince of all Politicall Historians, or to distaste honest Students, by depriving them of their bosome-delights, was contented,

contented, that *Tacitus* should be giuen to vnderstand from his Maiestie, how his pleasure was, that of those spectacles (in very deed preiudiciall vnto Princes) he should frame as few as possibly could be. And that about all things, hee should vigilantly take great heed, not to disperse any abroad, except vnto choise and excellent men, vnto Secretaries, and vnto Priuy Counsellors of State to Princes, to the end they might serue to facilitate vnto them the good and vpright gouernment of their people. And that about all, (euen as he tendered or loued his Maiesties good fauour) he should take especiall care, neuer to impart or communicate any vnto those turbulent or factious spirits, which in seditious and duskie seasons, might serue in stead of bright lamps, or far-seene beacons to that simple race of men, which is easily gouerned, as wanting the glorious light of letters, may be said to be blinde and without a guide.

---

*The Duke of Laconia, for hauing aduanced a most faithfull Secretarie of his, to the highest dignities of his estate, is accused before Apollo to idolatrize and dote vpon a Mignon: but he doth most egregiously defend himselfe.*

Rag. 38. 1 Part.

---

**T**HE now regnant *Duke of Laconia* hath of late aduanced one of his subiects (by him highly esteemed, and extraordinarily beloued) from a base and low fortune to the highest dignities, and supremest honours of all his Dominion. For he hath not only placed him in the sublime Senate of the *Laconians* (a degree by reason of its eminencie ambitiously aimed at, and sought after by



by diuers great Princes) but hauing infinitely enriched him with great reuenues, hath also made him to be as much honoured and regarded as any whatsoeuer most renowned subiect of all his State.

This so worthy *Duke*, by those who enuie the greatnesse of that his seruant, was before *Apollo's Maestie* denounced to be an Idolater of a *Mignon*, and a doter vpon a fauourite or darling.

*Apollo* being highly moued against that *Prince*, for the hainousness of so horrible a delict (as his manner is in any outrageous excelsse) without taking diligent information of the truth of the accusation, presently caused *Lewis Pulci*, Prouost-Marshal of this State, to be called before him, whom he threatned to be rigorously tortured, if within the space of halfe an houre, with all manner of scorne and derision, he did not bring before him, fast bound in fetters, as prisoner, the *Duke of Laconia*. *Pulci*, with all exact diligence accomplished *Apollo's* behests: for immediatly, all laden with heavy chaines, he haled and dragged the poore *Prince* before his *Maestie*, who by an expresse messenger was presently aduertised of his attachment, and forthwith commanded the *Martelli*, most vertuous *Florentines*, and publike Bell-ringers of *Parnassus*, that by the tolling of the greatest bell, the *Criminall Magistrate* should be called together, which was immediatly done.

Thus the *Duke* standing forth before him, *Apollo* himselfe, after he had tauntingly vpbraided him with the foule crime, whereof he stood endicted; all inflamed with wrath, he told him, that he allowed him but the space of halfe an houre to defend his reputation.

And in the meane time (as if that poore *Princes* case had beene vtterly desperate) he straitly commanded, that who-soeuer had committed the indignitie to haue adored a seruant of his, should be condemned to perpetuall infamie, as vnworthy to liue among the vertuous Princes of the *Phaean Court*.

Then the *Duke* thus began his defence. Sir, and father

## 34 *The New-found Politicke.*

of the vertuous; I haue so armed my conscience with the fine, and prooffe-cuirace of Innocencie, and so am I assured to haue liued vertuously, and vprightly in all my actions, as I am more than certaine to haue demerited nothing of your *Maiestie*. Nor doth your indignation, nor this precipitous doome, to see, that the dreadfull sentence of my infamie doth fore-goe the cognition of the cause, any iot dismay or confound me.

Only I maruell to see, what as yet I neuer beleued, that the fouleneffe of accusations, yea among the most iust and vncorrupted Tribunals, as this is, is of power to call in question, and bring into so dangerous hazards, the reputation of men of my ranke and qualitie.

But I quiet my selfe in the will of God, who hath euer willed, that the gold of others innocencie, should be refined in the fire of false calumnies, and in the rest of persecutions. I freely confesse vnto your *Maiestie*, to haue exalted my friend more than my maleuolent enemies haue reported vnto you. And in this my action, which to your *Maiestie* hath beene pourtraid so hainous, this only grieueth mee, that (in mine opinion) I haue not thoroughly performed all that vertue of compleat gratitude, which so deare a friend hath worthily deserued at my hands. And if those who accuse me, or other *Princes* my equals, of prodigalitie, of dotage, or of an abiect minde, borne in the soule sinke of sottishnesse, to serue seruants, when they see a Courtier well-beloued or rewarded by his Lord or Prince, would not suffer themselves to be blinded by malice, by passion, or by enuie, but with a minde void of flegme or spleene, would impartially consider the true merits of Court-fauourits, they would then name that a vertuous life, which they entitle vicious prodigalitie; dutie of gratitude those gifts, which they call inconsiderate; and a vertuous affection, the infamie, wherewith they charge them to dote vpon, or idolatrize *Mignons*: But it is not a profession fitting vulgar or ordinarie men, to diue or pierce into *Abditos Principis sensus*, & si quid occultius parant: whence it hapneth, that the ignorant, with the  
infamie

infamie of great men, fall into so grosse errors, as they stile the vertuous proceeding of a gratefull man, to be a vice of an abiect minde.

The Principallitie of the *Laconians* (as your *Maiestie* well knoweth) is Electiue, in which the confining Princes, haue euer beene of greater power, than he that ruled and commanded the same: not onely for the end and scope, common to all electiue Princes, after their death, to procure vnto their blood and kinsfolks, potent friends, but for the adherences, which foraigne Princes, for important respects, haue with the Senators or Peeres, that enioy the prerogatiue to elect a new Prince: the dependance and traine of whom they endeouour to acquire, and procure with those arts and tricks, as are already too well knowne to all men. Moreouer, your *Maiestie* knoweth, that the Prince of *Macedonia*, with his plots and practises had gotten so great authoritie in my State, and was so ouer-growne in forces aboue all the *Grecian* Princes, as he was not only the absolute arbitrator of all *Greece*, but openly aspired vnto an vniuersall Monarchie.

Besides, it is not vnknowne to your *Maiestie*, that the said Prince of *Macedonia*, vnder colour of amitie, and the protection of the *Dukes* of *Laconia*, with vndermining practises sought euer their ruine and ouerthrow. And forso-much as the power of the Prince of *Epirus* hindred him from being able to compasse so high ends, he, to remoue, or at least, to frustrate, or to weaken so strong an obstacle, more with machinations of gold, and with secret conspiracies, than with open force of Armes, he caused those insurrections of the people, and those rebellions in *Epirus*, that haue so much impaired the State thereof.

And (as a thing too too well knowne to the world) I will not now call to your memories, how that my most prudent Predecessor, fore-knowing that the depression of *Epirus*, was a manifest preparation for the ruine of the *Laconian* Empire; to assure the same from the ambition of so mighty an enemy, hee resolved, openly with might and maine to



aide and support the afflicted State of *Epirus*.

And how that good Prince died in the pursuit of his wise resolution, not without vehement suspicion of poyson ministred vnto him by expresse order from the Prince of *Macedonia*; as he, who neither could, nor would endure, that the diuision of *Epirus* (by him accounted so secure) should be hindred by him.

In this vnhappy state of things, I was aduanced to the Dignitie: And to auoid the disastrous end of my Predecessor, in the first months of my Principallitie, I shewed my selfe to be of a remisse genius, and altogether incapable of great affaires of State.

I did wholly apply my selfe to reforme the Magistrates of my Dominion, and correct the abuses and vices of my subiects, openly professing to be a capitall enemy to the Prince of *Epirus*; but in my heart, full well knowing wherunto the secret machinations, and plots of the *Macedonian* Prince aimed: and knowing also, that each losse of the Prince of *Epirus*, would proue my ouerthrow; I, to establish my State, reduced vnto so apparent dangers, resolved with my selfe, to afford him all the aid I could.

But, to assure mine owne life for those disastrous mischiefs, in which my Predecessor perished, it behoued me, in so strait and difficult a deliberation, to proceed with wonderfull caution and secrecie.

And obseruing (as no doubt your *Maiestie*, and all these Right Honourable Iudges know full well) that amongst the numberlesse imperfections incident vnto Electiue States, the greatest is, that, lesse than any whatsoeuer Principallities, they finde or enioy that most important, and vnualueable benefit of secrecie in their Ministers: forsomuch as the customes of men are so depraued, as their Senators and Counsellors proue often greedy Merchants, or Brokers of their Dignities and Offices; out of which they labour and practise to extract and reape the greatest commoditie, that possibly they can: Now therefore, euen in the beginning of my Principallitie, seeing my selfe engaged, yea and engulfed in

so many anguishes and perplexities: And knowing, that I must needs wracke, and vitterly perish vpon the rocke of Infidelitie, if in a businesse of so maine consequence, I made vse of those ordinarie Secretaries, whom I knew to haue long before fore-stalled and bribed by foraigne Princes: The great God (from whose only benignitie, and not from any else, I acknowledge this great benefite) inlightned my vnderstanding. And hee it was, that first proposed vnto mee, this mine, I will not say seruant; for by the matchlesse vertue, which I haue found and experienced in him, he deserueth not to be stiled with some meane, or with so bale a surname, but most deare-deare friend. And to him, who in the quality of a bosome seruant, had most faithfully serued me the space of full eight yeeres, I freely vnfolded that secret of my heart, which had it but falne into my imagination, I would haue deemed it most dangerous for me. And then it was, that I perceiued, how that the excellencie and high worth of a Secretarie consists not (as many thinke) in the speaking with elegancie, but in being secretly silent with fidelitie. This I say, because with so happy successe of the important businesse, which I had in hand, I vsed and imployed this my trustie seruant, as I most successefully came to beguile and countermine the wilie-wise Prince of *Macedonia*; which no subtile or craftie wit was yet euer able to doe.

And by the meanes of this my so faithfull Secretary, my affaires haue bin so carried, as no man could euer diue into, or so much as guesse at my designes. And I haue vnderhand aided and supported that Prince my friend, whom I openly professed to hate and persecute: and haue prosperously practised the trade, at once to laugh and to deceiue, with those who make publike ostentation to bee the canonicall Doctors of that Art. And with so vertuous a deceit haue I reduced the affaires of *Epirus* (whilome so imbroiled, as they were generally held desperate) vnto the state the world seeth. Since that from the most deplorable misery that could be, I haue raised the same to be the sole Arbitrator of

## 38 *The New-found Politicke.*

all Greece. And the *Macedonians*, who had chimera'd and ideated vnto themselves vniuersall Monarchies; and that in lesse than a moneth they should bee able to swallow downe all other mens states: from their highest hopes are so tumbled downe into a precipice of lamentable desperations, as hauing vtterly renounced their ambitious cepricios, to vsurpe other mens Estates, as with much adoe they keepe and maintaine their owne.

*Apollo*, hauing attentiuely listened vnto those things, all ioyfull ranne to embrace the Duke of *Laconia*, and with tendernesse of heart said thus vnto him.

Oh Duke of that thrice noble Nation, which in few words expresseth many things, right vertuously and honestly hast thou dealt with a man of so incomparable worth and vertue. And I tell thee plainely, that in thy most honourable *Laconian Senate*, there are but few other Senatours to be found equall in merit to this thy friend, to whom hadst thou giuen all thine Estate, yet shouldest thou dye vngratefull to him, and in his debt; sith in these vnhappy times, wherein euen in the open market of the perfidiousnesse of many, the secrets of Princes are at port-sale, sold to him that offereth most. That Secretary, who in important affaires proueth faithfull, and continueth trusty vnto his Prince, cannot so highly bee honoured, nor so bountifully be rewarded by him, but that he hath deserued much much more.

---

*Apollo*

---



Apollo, bewailing the wofull wrackes, which in the Courts of great Princes, his vertuous followers suffer, and fall into; for to assure their Nauigation, commandeth some of the chiefeſt learned men in his Dominion, to endeavour to frame a Sailing-card, to saile ſafely by land.

Rag. 23. 2 Part.

**T**HE deplorable wracks, which diuers learned men ſo often ſuffer in the Courts of great Princes, grieving *Apollo* daily more and more to the very heart, who with continuall labour and toilesome ſweats, of the moſt famous Sciences (hoping by them to merit the good fauour and grace of Princes) hauing freighted the Ship of their minds with them, are afterwards ſcene vnfortunately to loſe themſelues on the quick-sands of a beggerly hired Chamber, or to ſinke in the whirle-pool of ſome baſe Hoſpitall, and ſometimes to ſplit on ſome craggie rocke of beggery.

No riches of infinite vertues being of force to free them from ſo deplorable calamities: He, I ſay, would needs at laſt endeavour to finde out ſome remedy for ſo great miſchiefes, whereby hee might reſtaſſured, that in all Courts (but eſpecially in that of *Rome*, placed in ſo tempeſtuous a Climate) the nauigation of his beloued vertuous attendants might be reduced vnto all poſſible ſecurity; and all for the benefit of good letters, which doe much empaire their reputation, when others ſee that they ſo little aduance or benefit thoſe that ſpend moſt of their beſt age in learning them.

Now

# 40 *The New-found Politicke.*

Now *Apollo* seriously discoursing with himselfe, that if the *English*, the *Portagues*, the *Breston*, the *Biscan*, the *Hollander* and the *Zelander* Pilots, onely with a little obseruing of the *Starres*, the *Moone* and the *Sunne*, with a little stone in their hand, could and were able to curb and command the vast and dreadfull Ocean, which they so freely, and euery way, and at all seasons furrowed and waded through, as they had thereon plotted out high-waies and watlin-streets, towards and from all Coasts.

How it could bee that his vertuous, with the powerfull helpe of *Astronomy*, of *Cosmographie*, of the *Mathematiks*, of the *Mercors*, but chiefly with their quaint wits, sharpened on the whetstone of continuall reading of Bookes, could not inuent as easie and secure a nauigation by land, as the Pilots of the forenamed Nations had found out by sea. Therefore to assure (as farre as the vertue and strength of good letters can extend vnto) the nauigation by land.

*Apollo* did not many moneths since institute a Congregation of men, selected out from all the Sciences necessary for so maine a businesse, appointing as chiefe and president thereof, *Ptolomie*, the Prince of *Cosmographers*, vnto whom he allotted great *Aristotle*, as companion in the *Me-teors*, *Euclide* for the *Mathematicks*, *Guido Bonatti* for *Astronomie*: And to these he added as Coadiutor, Count *Baltazar Castilion*, a man well skil'd and practised in the bottomlesse seas of the Courts.

And for the better security of all that which he intended to establish for the happy successe of a businesse of so important a consequence, his *Maiestie* commanded, that famous *Annon* of *Carthage*, *Palinurus*, *Columbus*, *Cortese*, *Ferrante Magellanes*, *Amerigo Vespucci*, *Vasco di Gama* should be admitted in the Congregation, as they, who haue beene the prime & chiefest Pilots that euer the nauigation by Sea had.

First then (as it was conuenient) there was by that right excellent man *Ptolomie*, framed a most exquisite Card to saile by Land, which with singular cunning was euery way lineared.

And

And to come to the perfect knowledge of the true elevation of the merits of Courtiers, and longitude of the rewards, with which their seruices should be acknowledged, there were not onely inuented diuers and most learned *Astrolabs*, but a new and most artificiall *Quadrant*.

True it is that that excellent man *Guido Bonatti*, with all his profound Astronomie, laboured exceeding hard to finde out the true altitude of the pole of the Court of Rome; nor was it euer possible, either for him or for any other of the most sufficient of the whole Congregation, with any *Astrolabe* whatsoeuer, to euen or leuell and adiust the course of the Sunne of the phantasticke braine, and giddy humour of a selfe-conceited Prince.

For the genius of Princes being the true and safe North-Starre, which nauigating Courtiers ought heedily to obserue in the nauigations by land.

Those worthy men were much amazed, and wondred how a Starre so certaine and infallible in Sea nauigations, should in Land nauigation be found not onely vnstable and wauering, but was perpetually turned and gired about, by the two contrary motions of priuate interesse, and selfe-passion: from which two difficulties, many most dangerous turbulencies arising, they were often the causes of foule and horrible wracks.

But greater difficulties and incumberances were discovered in the most vncertain motions of the wandring Stars, of the Ministers and Officers of Princes, since (as it should haue bin) they were not so much rapt by the first impetuous Mouer of the good seruice due to their Prince, vnto which they were often manifestly seene to be retrograde.

And that which exceeded all wonder, was the amazement whereinto the Congregation fell, when by a certaine obseruation it perceiued, that the inferiour heauens of the Ministers, with the course of their priuate passions towards their owne interesse or selfe-respects, did often draw and rap the said *primum mobile*.

So that by these strange accidents, the businesse was so



intricate and full of confusion, as those Lords could neuer possibly come to the perfect knowledge of the regular and true motion of so many spears, as was necessary to those that were to publish infallible rules of them. The rubs and impediments increased when they came to the act to note and set downe the winds in the guide-ship compasse, which they found to be neither certaine, nor limited in number, as we see they are in all Sea-cards, but were little lesse than infinite; for, besides the foure master winds of the Princes will, of his childrens desires, of his Brethrens prerogatiue, of other Princes of the blood's preheminance, and the seuerall opinions of priuie Councillors, there were discovered an infinite number of quarter-winds, or side winds, of the ministers and Officers of the Court, of Mignons and Fauourits to the Prince, of vnder-Secretaries, of Buffons, of Flatterers, of Parasites, of Fiddlers, yea, and of Panders, all so irregular, so voluble, so vnconstant, and in some occasions, so stormy, so boistrous, so high and furious, as in the compasse which they were a framing, they bred so inextricable difficulties, as made those famous Pilots to condole the miserable condition of nauigating Courtiers, who in their land-sailing must bee enforced to fir and adapt the sailes of their wits to such a multitude of seuerall winds as appeared vnto them.

All which difficulties notwithstanding (though insuperable) those notable Pilots neuer fainted or gaue over. Nay rather, though they discovered the immense and vast Ocean of the Courts to be all ouer full of flats, shelues, shallows, quicksands, crags, rocks, gulfs, whirl-pools, sirts, Scilla's and Carybdis of enuious, emulous, malicious, seditious, malevolent, spightfull, rancorous, clamorous, turbulent, forward, skittish, and diabolicall, male-contentes, detraçtors, back-biters, slanderers, railers, grudgers, persecutors, finde-faults, fantastick-humors, and heteroclit-wits, by so much the more did their courage increase to surmount so hard a taske, and so intricate a businesse, and to bring it to some good passe.

Their

Their *Astrolabs* being framed, and the *Quadrant* finished, and the Ship-guide compasse reduced vnto the best perfection they could, the Congregation determined to come vnto the act of experience, whereupon hauing made choise of eight quaint, smug, and spruce Courtiers, all compleatly stored with patience (the most necessary biscuit, commodious prouision, and needfull sustenance for those that haue the heart to lanch into, and furrow the tempestuous Ocean of the Courts) who, whilest they diligently prepared themselves for their voyage, hauing hoised their sailes, and onely expecting a fauourable wind, a chance befell impossible to be beleeued; which was, that a most propitious North-gale blowing, to which all the eight Courtiers, suddenly hoised and spread the sailes of all their hopes, onely those of one were seene to appeare full swolne, and prosperously to follow his voyage, whilest the other seuen neuer budged from their stations.

Which the Lords of the Congregation perceiuing, they were much distracted, especially when they obserued, that in a Land-nauigation the fauourable winds of the Princes good grace and opinion did not blow equally in all the sailes of his Courtiers, though all of equall merit and worth.

And greater was their wonder, when the said fauourable winde, blowing a new faire stiffe gale, some Courtiers, who were prepared for a bon-voyage, speedily hoised, and spread all their sheeting, they might perceiue one who had neither mast, nor saile, nor tackling, of any merit, but lay there idly hulling in the hauen, to learne some practise of the Court, before he would aduenture himselfe into the dangers of so troublous and hazardous a nauigation, by the force of that propitious winde, was driuen out of the port of his restfull ease, and blowne roomeward into the deepe of managements beyond his skill or sufficiency; and with a most succesfull nauigation, end the voyage, with the purchase of great reuennues, of rich offices, of eminent honors, and of sublime titles: A nouelty that seemed so rare and strange to all the Pilots, that *Magelanes*, as one confounded

# 44 *The New-found Politicke.*

ded with wonder, said thus;

My honourable good Lords, I would neuer haue beleeued there should bee so great a difference betweene the Sea-nauigation, and the Land-sailing.

And these extrauagant nouelties which now I see, seeme so strange to me, as they make me greatly to doubt of any happy issue of this our enterprise. But, for as much as all arduous difficulties may at last bee overcome with a constant patience in the pursuit of them, let vs boldly proceed.

By this time another right vertuous Courtier, displayed the sailes of his faithfull seruice, at a faire westerly gale of the good fauour of his Prince, and by the quality of the sailes full puffed, with the gracious demonstrations of words, which he receiued from his Lord, imagining that he had gone a far journey, after a long-long voyage, hauing calculated the course of his nauigation, hee found himselfe riding at Anchor in the very same place, whence hee hoisted saile in the long voyage of his assiduous seruice: The silly and vnhappy wretch, hauing continually bin fed with diuers hopes of fallacious expectations, without substance of any good.

But a stranger accident presented it selfe vnto those Lords, when they saw at one same instant a stiffe gust to blow both South and North so ragingly, from the adle braine of a fantasticke Prince, that the vnfortunate Courtiers, tossed to & fro by two so contrary winds, could not resolue to which they were best to adresse their sailes, so that diuers vertuous good men perished in that tempestuous storme. At which strange case *Columbus* exclaimed and said; Now I plainly perceiue (my Lords) that the nauigation by Sea, wherein these extrauagances are neuer scene, is a businesse so safe, as it may be compared vnto such iournies as men go by land in Horse-litters. *Columbus* had no sooner vttered these words, but the Lords of the Congregation perceiued, that certaine right vertuous Courtiers, who rode in the hauen, were in great danger to be cast away; the Sea of the Court wrought so, and was beyond it's custome so risen; and the surges mounted so high, as they threatned a generall naufrage.



frage. The biggest Cables of the most exquisite Court-patience, although right strong and tough, did rend in sunder; so that all was wrackfull ruine. All which notwithstanding the skie of the Princes countenance was calme, and his aspect cleare, nor did any other winde blow, but the gentle *Zephirus*, or West of the Princes quietnesse. The milchiefe was apparent; the breath of the Princes indignation was not felt, and yet the miserable nauigating Courtiers perished in the harbour

All this raging storme notwithstanding, an hardy and couragious Courtier, who dared to heaue Anchor, & come out of the hauen; and (as euery man thought) was not only nor drowned nor ouerwhelmed; for, that blustering tempest which would haue endangered or wrack't any whatsoeuer best practis'd and skilfull Sea-man, serued him in steed of so prosperous a gale, as in a short time it brought him vnto an hauen of high and honourable dignities.

An accident (in truth) worthy of infinite admiration, and which caused great wonderment and amazement in all the Lords of the Congregation. It seeming very strang vnto them, that in the Land nauigation, those stormy tempests serued some in lieu of fauonable winds, which in most safe and quiet hauens were the dismall destruction of many.

But another thing seemed more wondrous vnto them, when in a calme skie, cleare welkin, and faire season; no clouds, no lightning, no thunder, nor any signe of foule weather appearing, there were suddenly scene certaine thunder-bolts to fall, which vtterly consumed and burnt two most vnfortunate Courtiers. At which vnwonted accident, the Lords of the Congregation were much affrighted, wondering how the thunder-darts, hurled by an irefull Prince, were not accompanied with those fore-going Lightning-flashes and thunder-claps, as those be, which by the All-powerfull hand of the great *God* are hurled at Mankind, and which forewarne all Courtiers to auoid them.

A little while after, they saw a Courtier assailed by an out-

## 46 *The New-found Politicke.*

ragious storme of persecutions ; who after he had long struggled, and stoutly defended himselfe against the muddie fury of the swolne Sea of his Princes wrathfull indignation , and from the furious blasts of cruell and malicious detractions, lest he should sinke and be swallowed vp, hee was forced to sling all his goods and merchandize ouer-board. And the miserable wretch had already lost the maine mast of his hopes, and his merits had a great leake, and drew in abundance of water of desperation, when loe his vessell rushed and split against the marble rock of the ingratitude of a most vnthankfull Prince.

Then followed a most strange thing, which was, that after so disastrous an encounter, the vessell of that Courtiers seruice being split, wrackt and sunke, the storme of Court-persecutions ceased, the Sea of the Princes indignation was calmed, and the rocke (which had caused that miserable wracke) was conuerred into a most safe haven: the Courtiers vessell but ere-while ouerwhelmed, of it selfe start vp out of the waues, more faire, more strong, and in better plight, than euer it had beene before. And the merchandize of his merits of it selfe was laded againe, which not long after, he vttered and vented at a very deare rate ; trucking and changing the same for great dignities, eminent titles, and rich reuenues.

This accident seemed very strange vnto the Lords Pilots, and vnto all the Congregation, nor could they sufficiently wonder how it could be possible, that in the land-nauigation the most vnhappy wrackes of some, might serue as great felicities to others.

Now the Congregation continuing in trying of new experiments, enioyned a sly-witty Courtier to hoise and display the sailes of his talent towards a wind that blew from South, and happily sailing, and keeping towards the North, after many dayes sayling the Pilot-courtier desirous to see where he was, he with his Astrolabe measured the altitude of the Pole of his merit; and to his great wonderment found, that hauing continually kept the prow of his faithfull ser-

want

uice towards the North of his Princes interresse, hee had made his voyage Southward. Of so strange a disorder, the Courtier at first accused himselfe, that (as hee should haue done) he had not steered the helme of his faithfull minde towards the North of his Princes good seruice. But when both with his sailing-card, and with his ship-guide compasse in his hand, he assured himselfe, that he had euermore guided the ship of his actions in an euen and honest line, he plainly perceived, that the errour or mistaking of his vnluckie voyage proceeded so, because the North of his Princes affection had suffered it selfe to be turned towards the South, by certain wicked and maleuolent whisperers, which he hath alwaies about him.

Then *Vespucci*, *Gama*, and other Pilots, besought the Lords of the Congregation, to giue ouer the businesse, as a desperate cure: and said, that nothing yeelded the navigation by sea more sure or safe, than the immutabilitie of the North-starre.

And that by the last most vnfortunate experience, it hauing euidently appeared, that the mindes of Princes (which are the infallible North-starre of land-naigation) suffering themselues so often and so easily to be turned, remoued, and circungired by lewd and wicked people of the Court: to aduenture to saile the tempestuous Ocean of the Courts, was a resolution not fitting wise men, but desperate persons.

In this interim the Lords of the Congregation might see a most elegant spruce Courtier, who for the space of more than threescore yeares had so happily sailed, both in the Court of *Rome*, and in others, that he had not only surmounted outrageous storms of ruthlesse blasts and boistrous winds of persecutions, but had euen shiuered and broken the very same huge rocks, on which he had split & wrackt his vessel; but that afterwards, when with a most pleasant gale, and prosperous wind, on the height of his felicitie, he pursued his course, onely for that he vnfortunately hit vpon a rush of an impertinencie of a base Catch-pole, he was vterly cast away. An accident which caused such distraction in the Congregation,



## 48 *The New-found Politicke.*

tion, that the Lords ioyntly resolved, to haue but one triall more made (and then be quiet) by a Courtier, that was ready to set saile; and him they commanded to hoise and spread all his sailes: But so it happened, that whilest he held on his course in a coast, deemed of all men, most safe and dangerlesse, his ship vnheedily, or by chance, hit vpon a rocke, and was wholly split and wrackt, which the Lords of the Congregation seeing, they all bitterly bewailed the ignorance and vnheedinesse of the Courtier; for so much as hee could not auoid that rocke. But he made manifest demonstration to them all, that it was not marked in the sailing-card. Whereupon all the Pilots casting their eyes vpon great *Ptolomey*, as if they silently accused him of ignorance, hauing omitted that rocke, which so well deserued to be marked in his Card, and had been the cause of so disastrous a mischiefe. But *Ptolomey* hauing first well viewed the place, and considered the countrey thereabout, did evidently demonstrate vnto the Lords, that no man liuing had euer before that time seene any shelfe or rocke in that place, and therefore he had not marked it in his Card; but that it suddenly grew and started vp in the very instant, that the vnforgotten Courtier hit and ranne vpon it.

Now the Lords of the Congregation perceiuing, that in the navigation by land, huge rockes did euery hand-while spring vp and grow in a moment, euen in the midst of fields and other places supposed most safe to be navigated in the darke night, they concluded their businesse to bee desperate, and their attempt impossible. And therefore dismissing the Congregation, they straitly commanded, that in the perillous Land-navigation, no man should dare to goe a iourney, except at high noone, and withall, euery man should carry a great Lanterne of wisdom, with a burning Taper therein in the prow of his proceeding; morning and euening with his bare knees on the ground, and hands heaued vp to heauen, humbly beseeching the Maiesty of the euer-liuing God, to send them good successe, since that for one to bring the Ship of his hopes into a Court, as into a safe haven,

heauen, doth rather depend from the immediate aide and assistance of God, than from any humane wisdom whatsoeuer.

---

*The Lord Iohn de la Casa, hauing presented his quaint Galateo, or booke of Manners vnto Apollo, meeteth with great difficulties in diuers Nations, about their promises to obserue the same.*

Rag. 28. 1 Part.

---

**T**HE Right Reuerend Lord, *Iohn de la Casa*, who (as wee wrote vnto you by our last) was with great solemnity admitted into *Parnassus*, where after he had visited these illustrious Poets, and complemented with all the learned Princes of this Court, hee presented his right quaint and profitable Booke of *Galateo* vnto *Apollo*, which his Maiestie did so highly commend, that immediately, he strictly commanded, it should inuiolably be obserued by all Nations: And at the same instant enioyned the said Lord to compose a *Galatea*, since it was manifestly knowne, that the Ladies of these moderne times, haue as much need to be corrected in their euill and depraued manners, as men. Which Edict caused great alteration in the people subiect vnto *Apollo's* dominion: For, it was neuer possible, neither by entreaties, nor by menaces, to induce the *Marquesans* to be pleased to receiue it; and they boldly protested, that they were rather resolu'd to renounce their Countrey, and forsake their children, than to leaue their most laudable custome, to honour their Lords and Masters with all sincerity of heart: to loue their friends with purity of af-

H

fection,

fection, rather than with louting courtesies, and with such other Court-ceremonies learn'd by rote.

There were also found greater difficulties among Princes, because the most mighty Monarchie of France would neuer subiect it selfe to the nice obseruations of the strict rules of *Galateo*, *Nipissi*, & *in quantum*, her owne tast and liking did accord vnto, which (she said boldly) she would rather attend, than on affected faire creances, which she should neuer obserue but with a certaine outward apparence.

The Soueraigne Monarchie of Spaine swore solemnely, that she would submit her selfe vnto *Galateo's* rules, on condition the Lord *De la Casa* would remoue but one Chapter out of it, which was, that being at a Table with other Princes, shee would not haue it counted ill manners in her, if seeing a good morsell in her companions dish, she did presently lay hold on it, and conuey the same vpon her owne trencher. Morcouer shee would not be noted to be ouergluttonous, if by chance shee should ear and deuoure all her neighbours part. The Venetian Magnificoes affirmed, that they would willingly allow of *Galateo*, provided alwaies that the Lord *De la Casa* would declare therein, that with all diligence to pry into, and seek to know other mens matters, busineses, and secrets, was no point of ill manners, but a necessary point of State-policy.

Then all the Princes of Italy applauded and embraced *Galateo*, onely they said, that without being accounted vnmannerly, they would bee allowed to chew on both sides. But the Dutch mutined, and were like to cause some hurly-burly: for they did not onely vterly refuse to binde themselves to the Italian sobriety in drinking, but did obstinately require, that it should be enacted and recorded in *Galateo*, that the Dutchmens excessiue quaffing, and continuall being drunken, and Cup-motten, was one of the chiefeest vertues could be found in men of their Nation, and one of the first requisits that Princes and Common-wealths, for the safety and welfare of their States, could wish for, or desire in their Subiects, which request of theirs was by all the learned



learned of *Parnassus* rejected and impugned, as impertinent and abominable.

And therefore touching that particular of sobriety in drinking, the Dutch were earnestly intreated and exhorted to submit themselves vnto the rules of *Galateo*, since that by reason of their custome of immoderate bibbing, and so often being fox't, they were by the best Nations of Europe pointed at as gazing-stocks.

To these obiections the Dutchmen answered stoutly, that those sober men deserved rightly to be stiled soul drunkards, who living vnder the bondage and seruitude of Princes, by the phantasticke humour, or toyish conceit of one man, strangely passionate and giddy headed, they were daily insulted vpon, oppressed, hurried, and extorted in liues, lands, and goods: And that those drunken Germanes should bee reputed perfectly sober, who had the wit to vindicate themselves, and had likewise the heart and grace to maintain themselves in liberty: adding moreover, that they accounted them bedlam fooles, who did not beleue, that the drunkenesse of the Germane people was the true foundation and establishment of so many famous Republikks as were now seene among them. For the safety of a State, and the vniuersall peace of the people, depending onely on the fidelity of the ministers of Princes and Republikks, and on the well-meaning plainnesse and sincerity of euery mans mind: what other more precious iewell could bee desired in the world, then continually to see in Germany by vertue of excessive quaffing of Wine, to vomit forth the inwardest secrets and most hidden cogitations of the minds of men.

The Germanes added moreover, that by long experience they had plainly discovered, that they did most exquisitely well aduise & counsell their countrey, who by means of the good store of wine that they had drunke, hauing therein drowned all priuate interestes, and smothered all foule dissimulation, which sobriety is wont to beget in others minds; the open-hearted Dutch spake alwaies with a single free heart, and not as the Italians, and other Nations, yea, the

## 52 *The New-found Politicke.*

sobrest are commonly wont, onely with their mouth, ordinarily full of guile and leasings.

They said likewise, that so ambitiously affecting the glorious name of braue men at armes, as was well knowne to all the world, they could not with patience listen vnto the counsels and deliberations of sober men, who are commonly full of timidity, and of a vicious circumspection, vailed with the mantle of prudence; but because they would haue them to be generous and courageous, they would not allow, that any man should vndertake to counsell his Countrey being fasting, but after hee had first swilled downe good store of grape-liquor, and enflamed his heart with generosity, it being the proper quality of good wine rather to expell timidity from the heart, than remoue iudgement from the vnderstanding.

And therefore the Germanes with great reason, *De reconciliandis inuicem inimicis, & iungendis affinitatibus, & ad sciendos Principibus, de pace denique ac bello, plerumque in conuiuijs consultant, tanquam nullo magis tempore ad simplices cogitationes pateat animus, aut ad magnas incalescat.*

Furthermore they said, That if the Italian vicious sobriety were introduced among the Germanes, that most faithfull and sincere Nation, would therewithall begin to abound with those double hearts, false minds, secret thoughts, vnseene sleights, handy-dandy, or turne-coat spirits, fraught with treasons, treacheries, conspiracies, and machinations, full of vntrue and forged affections, masked with secret hatred, with faigned and dissembled friendship, and with all manner of foisting, whereof those Nations that glory to be sober are most abundant Cicilies and fruietfull Egypt, a thing so true, that the French, who for the vnspottednesse and puriry of their free and single hearted minds, in the excellent vertue to be euer most faithfull & loyall to their Kings, haue at all times bin most glorious and renowned in the world, since diuers of them haue left the most commendable custome to quaffe merily, and to bee drunken after the good Dutch fashion, haue suffered themselues to bee drawne into those

those most felonious actions that the world knowes full well. And if that little window in a mans breast, was by the wisest of former ages deemed a thing so necessary, and esteemed as an vnualueable benefit vnto mankind, because through it a man might visibly see and view the hearts of certaine sic cunny catching companions, who, within being most vgly deuils, imploy the vtmost of their endeauiours to bee repured faire Angels; With what ground of good reason can any man blame the right laudable and precious custome to quaffe merily, and to be drunke? it being most palpable and euident, that drinking of much wine hath the vertue to make bodies diaphaned or transparent. For which solid reasons, which by *Apollo* were both allowed and commended for militant, it was resolved, that concerning the particular point of drinking moderately and soberly, the excellent and farre renowned Dutch Nation should not bee subiect vnto the strict precepts of *Galateo*.

The vse of drunkennesse being among the Germanes rather an artifice of the Publike, than a vice of priuate men; It being manifestly knowne, that both in times of peace and of warre, those nations are best aduised that doe as the Germans; *Deliberant, dum fingere nesciunt: constituent, dum errare non possunt.*

---

H 3

Apollo



*Apollo hauing highly commended the Statute, made by the most mighty Kings of Spaine, that no Aduocates, Lawyers, or Proctors shall passe into the Indies, the Doctors of the Law finding themselves aggriued, complaine vnto his Maiestie.*

Rag. 83. 1 Parr.

**T**He renowmed Court and habitation of *Parnassus* may rightly be esteemed most happy, not so much for the right excellent gouernment of *Apollo's Maiestie*, nor because it is inhabited by the most quaint, flourishing, choise, and sublime wits of the whole vniuerse, as because the exquisitenesse of a vertuous life, the perfection of all right honourable customes, and the exactnesse of all the best lawes disperfed through the whole world, are therein with all precise diligence introduced, propagated, cherished and obserued. The reason is, because those that inhabit or reside there, are bound to bring the most commendable fashions of their Countries.

A custome, that hath brought so great commoditie vnto the Priuate, and so honourable reputation vnto the Publike, as all men may euidently perceiue, that to be a right blessed and happy country, which liueth and subsisteth, not so much by her owne proper lawes, as by and with those iudiciously selected from out all other most ciuill and best established Nations.

*Apollo* hauing lately bin informed, how the most potent Kings of *Spaine*, hauing vnder great penalties prohibited, that no Aduocates, no Lawyers, nor Proctors shall passe into the *Indies*, was pleased to approue and ratifie the said Decree

as most wholesome, as most holy. And did highly extoll and commend the piety of those Monarks, who shewed so great charitie towards the new world, in seeking to preserue it from that mischieuous infection, that hath filled and infected the old one with so many deplorable calamities and wailfull controuersies. Whereupon his *Maiestie* commanded, that the said holy and excellent Edict should forthwith be engrauen, and enregistred in a faire table of metall, which to the perpetuall memorie thereof should be affixed neere vnto the twelue Tables of the most famous Romane Lawes in *Forma maximum*. We must not omit to let you vnderstand, that the Doctors of the Lawes were greatly moued and vexed at this iniunction, who earnestly recommended the indemnitie of their repuration vnto his *Maiestie*, alleging, that if they should not obtaine the fauour to haue the publication of that ordinance staied, occasion would be giuen vnto many to imitate those of *Ancona*, of *Nercia*, of *Recanati*, and of other people, who to the great dishonour of good letters, had chased and expelled from our all their counsels and consultations those Pettie-foggers and Lawpleaders, which of all other people were held in so great admiration; for they verily beleueed, that without the *PLACET* of a man skilfull in the Law, it was impossible for any man to say or doe any thing well or honestly. And that by so much the more, they besought his *Maiestie* to take their cause into his consideration, as there was question made of the indemnitie of the thrice-sacred Liberall Arts, which all Students of the Lawes, to their intolerable costs and charges, and with vnspeakable toyle, labour and sweat, did waste and consume themselves to learne.

At whose strange instances, *Apollo* (against the opinion of all the by-standers) fell into a chafing passion, and with great indignation, answered those malapert Doctors, that hee much wondred, how before his *Maiesties* sacred presence, they had dared to affirme, that they spent, and laboured, and sweat so much to learne the sacred Liberall Arts, as if the *Delphick* Edict were not knowne to all the world, in  
which

## 56 *The New-found Politicke.*

which the studie of the Lawes is especially declared to be no Liberall Science, but a base trade, and a mechanicall occupation, brought into the world for the affliction of mankind, studied and plodded vpon without any delectation to the minde, without any speculation of the intellect, and without the so materially-needfull helpe of the soueraigne Muses in all perfect and commendable Sciences; and only exercised for meere couetousnesse of lucre, to fatten with pelfe and crownes a peece of man with two gloriing eies in his skonce, or a flouently fellow, who although he be altogether void of that viuacitie of wit, which good and noble letters affect so much, neuerthelesse, to become an eminent Aduocate, it sufficeth him to haue a blockish braine, a porter-like grosse complexion, a rusticall behauiour, and a clownish demeanour, fit rather to draw in a cart, than to conuerse with ciuill or learned men.

---

*An Apothecarie, at the very instant, that he is taken prisoner by Sergeants, without being examined at all, is forthwith condemned and sent to the Gallies.*

Rag. 65. 2 Part.

---

**T**He Apothecarie that dwelt at the signe of the two Crownes in the high Mercerie-street, was foure daies since apprehended by the Officers of the Criminall Court: and forsomuch as the poore wretch was suddenly hood-winkt, and muffled, and on mens shoulders carried to the hauen, and put into a Gallie, all *Parnassus* rested much amazed, to see the execution of that vnfortunate mans condemnation, foregoe the framing of his enditement.

It



It is reported, that this hath hapned at the instant request of all the chiefe Monarks of the vniverse, now resident in this State, who thinke themselves offended to the quicke by that Apothecarie, forsomuch as hee did openly sell **Fine smoake**: a merchandise, which Princes challenge and pretend to belong onely to them; and that no priuate person whatsoeuer should dare to sell but they.

Some suppose, that by the example of that vnfortunate wretch they haue gone about to terrifie all others from troubling them in matters concerning their iurisdiction and prerogatiue. And although the shallow-headed and simple sort of people giue out, that the Apothecaries faule deserued not so rigorous a resentment, yet those that will prie and thorewly diue into the secrets and interestes of great Princes, affirme, that he hath very gently, and with much indulgence beene dealt withall. Forsomuch as **Fine smoake**, seruing Princes (in many and daily occasions) in lieu of fine coyned gold, euery treasure of theirs (though neuer so rich and great) would soone be exhausted, whensoever that so currant money of **Fine smoake**, losing its credit and esteeme among the vulgar sort of people; Princes should ere long bee enforced (according to the Plebeian fashion) to pay their debts with ready money.

The vertuous people of Apollo's State having  
 consigned vnto his Maiesties Generall Treasur-  
 er the accustomed Donatiue of a thousand  
 conceits, according to their custome they beg a  
 boone or grace at his hands.

Rag. 81. 2 Part.

**T**Hose that haue exact knowledge of the passages of  
 this State, know full well that the verruous of *Par-*  
*nassus* pay duly vnto the Exchequer-Chamber, not  
 only the tenth part of the fruits of their wits, but the quit-  
 rent taxed according to each mans talent: whence it is, that  
 fertile *Ouid* doth yearly pay vnto the publike Receiuers  
 eight Elegies; *Virgil* fourescore printed Heroicke verses;  
*Horace* siue Odes; *Martiall* eleuen Epigrams; and so others  
 according to their selsment or taxation.

Besides that, the vertuous euery three yeares vnder the  
 name of a Donatiue or free gift (yet such a Donatiue, as if it  
 be not paid with a genuine good will, without losing its mo-  
 dest name, it may be exacted, distrained, and leuied by Bai-  
 liffs and Sargeants, who may distraine goods, take pawnes,  
 and sell them at Port-sale) pay into the *Delphick* treasurie  
 a million of conceits, which by the soueraigne Muses  
 are afterwards liberally distributed among those sillie Li-  
 terates and poore Schollers, who being depriued of all  
 munition, onely for the loue and good will they shew to-  
 wards good letters, yeeld themselues worthy to bee re-  
 leeued.

And the custome is, that vpon the occasion of so large a  
 Donatiue, his *Maiestie* is euer wont to counter-change the  
 bounteous

bounteous liberalitie of his Vertuous with some futes or fauours, which the learned may lawfully demand and challenge.

So that the last weeke, after the collection of the Donatiue, in a generall Congregation, the vertuous concluded to beg six graces at *Apollo's* hands, all which were set downe in a note or memoriall, that should be presented to him, when as the quaint *Classis* or wittie forme of the Politike-vertuous aduertised the Congregation, that in the occasions of begging futes, boones, or graces from Princes for any merit a man may pretend, it was necessarie to auoid the error of demanding ouer many things at once, not only because the multitude of graces which Sutors craue, doe distaste and molest Princes, who commonly are easily distasted vpon occasions to pay bonds or duties; but because hee that beggeth pluralitie of requests, is commonly answered and satisfied with the slightest and worst of them: And therefore it would proue a wise resolution, in such a case, to bee very earnest and circumspect for the obtaining of one onely good sute. Alwaies prouided it bee of good worth and consequence, and which without a note of much ingratitude may not be refused or denied by the Prince.

This aduertisement of the Politicians, was by the generalitie of the Vertuous, applauded, commended and followed. Whereupon the very next day, there were sent vnto his *Maiestie* the Right Excellent *Bernardino Viperio*, and *Tiberio Serpentino*, both Aduocates for the Vniuersitie of the Vertuous, who hauing tendred and presented the Donatiue vnto *Apollo*, they most humbly besought him, that in prouiding of Iudges for his Tribunals, and of other officers for publike Magistrates, he would be pleased to make choise of men of milde and gentle natures, of a courteous and affable genius, of a plausible disposition, of a meeke and lowly dexterity, of easie access, of a quicke vnderstanding, of a nimble apprehension, of a temperate patience, of a tractable conuersation, and of a cheerfull aspect. And that it might stand



with his good pleasure to send certaine eteroclit, irregular, arrogant, fantastick, wayward, peeuisht, insolent, passionate, self-conceited, humorous, proud, giddie-headed, and foully tainted Animals, who with their vtuned, vndeclinable, vnserled, and distempered Calfe-braines put wretched sutors, and miserable Clients into greater troubles, and more harmfull agonies, than the processes, or please themselves, and appoint them to be Botesons, Masters-mates, and Auditors in the Gallies, there to employ, and exercise their turbulent, seditious, litigious, mutinous, harsh, and quarrelous talent vpon the Ging, Swabbers, and Rowing-slaues, which is, and proues so inluppportable to free men.

---

*By letters intercepted, and taken from a Currier, dispatched by some Princes to the Lake of Auerno, the common people come to know, that the rancors and hatreds now rainging among diuers Nations, are occasioned and stirred vp by the artifices of their Princes.*

Rag. 58. 2 Part.

---

**B**etweene the confines of *Pindo* and *Libetrum*, on Monday night last, was an extraordinarie Poste rob'd, whom certaine mighty Princes had in great diligence dispatched towards the Lake *Auerno*. And forsomuch as the Currier had no hurt done him in his bodie; it is suspected, that the robbery hath beene committed to none other end, than to seize on his letters, as indeed it followed: for they onely tooke a packet from him, which he had about him, directed to the Infernall Furries,

ries, *Allecto*, *Thesifon* and *Megea*, by which letters (and truly with great scandall) it hath beene discovered, that certaine Princes doe wage and stipend the said Furies, to the end, that not onely among diuers Nations, but often among the subiects of one same Prince, they may sowe and nourish perpetuall strifes, and neuer ending discords. And to fill vp the measure of distastes, there was a letter found in the said packet, of ten thousand duckats, to bee paied them for the arrearages of six moneths past. The subiects of those Princes, that haue written the letters, by their Deputies haue caused them to be presented vnto *Apollo*, to whom they haue grieuously exclaimed, and bitterly complained, that their Princes, who ought vigilantly to heed nothing for much, as the perpetuall peace and vnanimous concord, not only of their owne particular subiects, but of all other Nations besides, should with ready money purchase seditions to others, and mischiefes to themselves. And that vntill now, they neuer came to the knowledge, how by the meere artifices, tricks, plots, and machinations of Princes, those diuisions, factions, grudges, vnkindnesses, distastes, discords, and vnnaturall hatreds, were scene so to abound among diuers Nations; and to bee the source and root of those calamitous and infinite mischiefes, that so much oppresse and afflict mankind.

All outrages, excesses, abuses, and pollutions of that nature, as if they were once cleane rooted out of the world, men might securely enioy the comfort, to see the *French* loue the *English*, the *Spaniard* affect the *French*, and the *Dutch* embrace the *Italian*, and see a perfect peace and good concord to follow betweene all men.

Whilst these Deputies were thus discoursing, it was obserued that from *Apollo's* eyes, through the great compunction of what he heard, there gushed forth abundance of sad teares. Whereupon the by-standers supposed verily, that his *Maiestie* would in raging passion burst forth into some bitter termes against those Princes, that were charged

## 62 *The New-found Politicke.*

and accused of so hainous crimes, when thus he said: Oh you my faithfull friends, your complaints are as grieuous, as they be true; but know, that the enormities whereof you complaine, proceed not so much from the bad or waiward nature of Princes, as they are occasioned by the turbulent humors and seditious deuises of the peeuish people, who with their ficklenesse and instabilitie doe so worke, as it is impossible to purchase and obtaine the vniuersall peace of mankind with any other instrument, than with sowing those discords, diuisions, seditions, and factions among Nations, whereof you so much, and so grieuously complaine: for long experience hath made Princes to know, that the huge and vnweldie machine of raiging securely, is all built and reared vpon the firme foundation of equally-contributing and iustly-distributing. And it is a thing most manifest, that the people without Princes to sway and gouerne them, would of themselves precipitate into more cruell seditions and bloody quarrels, than those, which for the publike peace, and generall good of all, others sowe and breed among them. All mischiefs (oh you my most beloued) very necessarie. Although it grieuously griueth mee to see, that the infirmitie of those vniuersall iarrings, and discords, which now reigne in mankind cannot be cured with any more soueraigne remedy, and ready antidote, than with the bitter medicine, which you say is now so nastie vnto you.

---

Antonio

---



Antonio Perez of Aragon, hauing presented the Booke of his Relations vnto Apollo, his Ma-iesty doth not onely refuse to accept it, but commandeth the same to be presently burnt.

Rag. 60. 2. Part.

**A**Ntonio Perez, whilom principall Secretary to the most mighty King of Spaine, Philip the second, knowing the bad opinion that that Secretary purchaseth vnto himselfe among all Nations, who with distaste parteth from his Prince; within a while after he had reconered himselfe in France, for his owne discharge, published vnto the world those his vnhappy Relations, which haue so heauily laden him with infamy and blame. For, whilest he with all manner of art and skill should haue procured to conceale them, vpon Thursday morning last, dared to present them to Apollo; who, as soone as hee saw the Booke, and was informed of the contents thereof, fell into such indignation against him, that euen then hee caused the same to be burnt in the publike & chiefe Market-place, and said vnto Perez, That he had giuen vnto his Relations that place in Parnassus which he and they deserued. And that to the end other Secretaries, his equals, might take example, and learne to preferre secrecie, and faithfullnesse of silence before the charity to ones proper life it selfe; yea, and before the loue of a mans owne selfe: for, euen as he deserueth the name of a treacherous and proditorious villaine, that vpon any casuall distaste, or conceiued vnkindnesse, reuealeth the secrets committed to his trust in times of former friendship; so a thousand times most shamefull, infamous, and cuer to bee detested is that Secretary, who for whatioeuer  
hard

## 64 *The New-found Politicke.*

hard vsage he may haue receiued from his Prince, publisheth those secrets which by his Lord and Master haue beene imparted vnto him in forepassed confidence, not onely voluntarily, much lesse by any kinde of cruell racke or sharpe torture, ought neuer to be published or disclosed to any creature whatsoeuer.

---

*The Monarchie of Spaine is much agrieved, that  
her falshoods and treacheries are discovered.*

Rag. 2. 3 Part.

---

**I**T is not yet well knowne, whether it were by chance, or by the malice of some Frenchmen, or (as many haue vehemently suspected) by the machination of that Nation, which is so implacable an enemy vnto the French, some few yeares since, a fire tooke hold of the Royall Palace of the Monarchie of France; and so great was the flame, and so dreadfull the blaze, that the neighbouring Monarchies entred into feareful suspicion, that so huge a fire could hardly be quenched, but with the ruine of their states: so that euery man, for the safety of his owne, ranne speedily to quench the fire in an others house. The English, albeit naturall enemies vnto the French, with all diligence brought thither the waters of their *Thames*. The Germanes, those of *Mose* and *Rhine*. The Venerians did in a manner empty all their Fennes and Marishes. The prudent Dukes of Tuscanie, in great haste ran with all sorts of weapons, to helpe to extinguish that consuming flame, which wise men greatly feared, was likely to end in an vniuersall desolation.

And truly it was wondrous strange to see that the Monarchy of Spaine, knowne to be so deadly an enemy vnto the French, these also among the chiefe friends of France laboured

boured with might and maine to extingwish that fire, at which most men supposed, that she would rather run merily to warme her selfe, whereat all men stood amazed, especially when they saw, that shee with all solicitude, and externall charity brought vnto it, not onely the waters of her golden *Tagus* and *Iberus*, but also of the vast Ocean, of which when the English and the Hollanders please, shee is absolute Mistris.

Since those Politicians sinisterly interpreting the Spaniards charity, declared publikey, that it was a most pernicious thing in the necessities of the French, to admit the aides of those Spaniards, who being knowne to be eternall foes, & capitall enemies vnto France, ought rather to be esteemed the Architects of the vtter ruine of the French, than zealous of the greatnesse and prosperitie of their kingdome: as they who measuring all the Actions and proceedings of those which reigne among Princes, by the onely compasse of priuate interest, doe seldome admit any manner of piety towards God, much lesse of charity towards men.

And so much the more were such Politicians become abominable to most Nations, as it manifestly appeares, that the Spaniards in their forwardnesse, diligence, and charity, to bring water vnto that fire, did not equall onely, but exceed whatsoeuer best friend vnto the French. And that which increased the wonder, and that among the simpler sort, caused great reputation vnto the Monarchy of Spaine, was, that Flanders and Austria her ancient Patrimonies, burning in a most cruell combustion of warre, she had preferred the welfare and safety of the French, before the charity of her owne preservation.

But for so much as no humane endeouour, nor store of water was sufficient to quench the least sparkle of so frightfull a fire: And that notwithstanding all the diligence and remedies that were vsed, the deuouring flames of those most fierce and bloody ciuill warres, increasing daily more and more, the wel-meaning and best affected simpler sort of men began to listen vnto the Politicians aduertisements, and to



suspect, that the charity of the Spanish Monarchy was altogether priuate inreresse, and peculiar Spanish charity; which made them resolute, no longer to giue credit vnto outward apparences, but inwardly to view what matter the Spaniards brought in their Caske, and found, that in lieu of water to quench fire, they had filled them with pitch, tarre, rosen, oile, and turpentine, and also with diabolically diffentions to foment and increase the same. Which treachery was likewise found to bee fauoured by certaine French Barons, who more than others professing to bee charitable, made vse both of the barrells, and of the matter lent them by the Spaniards. Whereupon they were by the iust disdain of the French Monarchy presently put to death, and burnt in the very same flames, which with so great sedition, and treacherous infidelitie, they nourished in the heart of their owne Countrey.

And the Spaniards were not only chased from that worke, but by sound of Trumpet publicly proclaimed to be a company of false hearted hypocrites. And by an especiall Edict of the French Monarchy, all men were giuen to vnderstand, that if euer there were any man found that would beleue, that any sparke of charity towards the French could lodge in the breast of a Spaniard, he should be held, esteemed, and reputed an egregious Gull.

And that if after the first warning he should persist in his error, he should be tossed in a blanke, as a factious and seditious fellow.

It was a thing worthy of admiration to see, that so soone as the Spaniards and the foresaid vnnaturall French gaue ouer their worke, that fire which before was so great, that the most iudicious doe affirme, it was in all humane reason inextinguible, on a sudden ceased of it selfe: Whereupon the eternall and farre renowned *Flower de Lucie*, whilom so hurried and trampled vnder foot, sprung vp againe, more gloriously flourishing and resplendent than euer they were.

And France, which through the immoderate ambition of some turbulent spirits, had most barbarously bin torment-  
ted

red and molested more than full forty years, to the great wonderment of all, in the twinkling of an eye became quiet and in peace.

Whereby all the world came to know, that the Spaniards had beene the first Authors of that euer deplorable French combustion, which they vnder most specious shewes and pretences of Religion, and christian Charity, had laboured to make the world beleue that they sought to quench. Some report that the Spanish Monarchy vpon this retired her selfe into her royall Palace, and that for many daies, shee would not admit any body to see her, hauing giuen her selfe ouer vnto so great melancholy, that with floods of teares trilling downe her blubred cheeks, shee loudly exclaimed, that shee would much rather haue lost two of her best kingdomes, than to see those her holy and hypocriticall pretexts so scofft at, so derided, and so laid open to all the world, wherewith shee remembred to haue diuerstimes (to her infinite profit) sold vnto the world most stinking *Assa-fetida*, in stead of Muske, Zuer, and Amber-greece: It seeming vnto her to be deprived of her richest treasure, and to haue lost her inexhaust mynes of gold and siluer in Peru, yea, and of the new world besides, seeing her selfe so vnluckily deprived of the hope and benefit, to be at any time more able to depaunt vnto the silly credulous people, white for blacke, or chalke for cheese; deeming it a very hard case to see herselfe brought vnto the wretched and dreadfull condition, in which shee hath euer seene the French, to be inforced to purchase kingdomes and dominions with the onely force of the point and dint of the Sword, and not as heretofore shee hath done with the onely semblances of her false-holy pretexts, which haue sometimes stood her in stead of flourishing and strong Armies. Shee knowes that shee hath put the world into combustion, and hath euer loued to fish in troubled waters.

And it grieueth her beyond measure, that shee hath so lost the good opinion of most Nations, that shee is in some danger that none will hereafter beleue her though shee chance

## 68 *The New-found Politicke.*

to speake the truth; whereas heretofore the stimulation of false pretexts, and of most apparent hypocrisie were held in credit, and in lieu of thrice sacred verity, most absolute zeale and perfect deuotion.

---

*The Spanish Monarchie arriveth in Parnassus,  
She intreateth Apollo to be cured of a Can-  
terie: Shee is dismissed by the politike Physi-  
tians.*

Rag. 4. 3 Part.

---

**I**T is now foure months since the renowned Maiestie of Spain arrived at this Court, vnto whom *Apollo* forthwith assigned a day for her publike & solemn entrance, which by the consent of the whole Consistory of the learned, was appointed to be in the royal Audience-Chamber, in the presence, and with the assistance of the Soueraigne *Muses*: which solemnity (for some vrgent occasions) was not performed but two daies since.

The reason is, because she hath spent the full time of foure months in consultation with the Poet Princes, about the Titles which shee should mutually giue and receiue from others; as also in agreeing about the manner how to receiue them, and how they would receiue her in their reciprocall visitations.

The consideration whereof hath made all the vertuous of this Colledge, to stand amazed, and bitterly to bewaile the hard condition of these moderne times, infected with the contagion of so many complemental vanities. And the grieuances of the vertuous were so much the more increased, for so much as diuers learned Princes openly refused to bee visited



visited by that great Queene, saying, that they feared to receive some insult or affront from her, for they had lately received letters from Italy, wherein they were by their loving friends forewarned to be circumspect, and vigilantly stand vpon their guard, it being peculiar vnto the Spaniards to goe visit others, with intention rather to injury than to honour them. And that they thought it an egregious folly, in lieu of auoiding of affronts abroad, to expect them with bended knees and cap in hand at home in their owne houses.

And although that so potent a Monarchie (to the great admiration of all) hath shewed her selfe much more niggardly, in giving others satisfaction of Titles, than in distributing of her Duckats, shee hath notwithstanding received from these Poet Princes, and from all vertuous Potentates (who concerning this titular circumstance, stand rather vpon real substance than on the vanity of things) the greatest gust and contentment she could desire. True it is, that one thing hath much empaired the reputation of so great a Queene in this Court, which is, that albeit she stand in extreme need of trusty friends, shee neuertheless sheweth her selfe so procliu and foreward to alienate those from her, who expect for nothing at her hands but satisfaction in words.

Yea, some haue noted (as a remarkable thing) that the Master of the Ceremonies hath forewarned her Maiestie, that those precise punctilios shee so nicely stands vpon, are most odious, and onely proper to barbarous Kings, and right worthy her royall Maiestie. And that a great Queen in Europe, her equall, hath in great passion and anger plainly told him to his teeth, that she much marvelled both at him and all his ceremonials, since hee seemed not to know, how a Prince without grauity and State, may rightly be compared to a peacocke without a traine. It is impossible to set downe with what longing curiosity and earnest desire, so renowned a Princesse hath bin expected by all the learned of this Court: for, from the vtmost bounds of all *Apollon's* Dominions, an infinite number of all sorts and sexes, haue  
flocked

flocked hither to view the countenance of that mightie Queene, who with a prodigious stream of happines, hath in short time vnited & brought vnder her diuers potent Kingdoms; and with them framed an Empire so formidable, that there is no Prince in the known vniuerse, but for feare & suspicion of her, hath at some time or other bin driuen to put on a Iacket of maile, or a Cuirace of Steele.

This Queene not many moneths since, attended on by a numberlesse Fleet, with prosperous navigation, arriued safely in the Isle of *Lesbos*: and the most honourable Ladie the Republike of *Genoa*, hath gratis lent her her most famous Port, although by reason of a certaine ancient prerogative, the family of the *Dorias* draw a very great reuenue out of it.

The Spanish Monarchie, in comparison of that of France, of England, and of other ancient Monarchies of Europe, is but yong in yeares, but in body and bulke far bigger than any other whatsoeuer: and to the proportion of her yeares, she is of an vnmeasurable greatnesse, whereby it is argued, that if she continue to grow vnto that age, in which humane bodies are wont to receiue increase and growth, shee will prooue an huge Giantesse, and attaine to that boundlesse height of vniuersall Monarchies, vnto which the *Romane* Monarchie came.

But the accidents of matters, and secrets of State, affirme most assuredly, that she cannot grow much greater. And that in her tendrest yeares shee is sprung vp vnto that height of beedic, vnto which shee may in any long time attaine: which is evidently perceiued by this infallible argument, that in these daies, shee groweth but halfe an inch with greater difficultie than in former times, shee did two handfull.

This potent Lady is of so swarthy an hue, that shee drawes neere vnto the *Moore* or *African*.

And therefore are her comportments rather disdainfull and proud, than serious and graue, and in all her actions she sheweth her selfe more cruell than seuer. And for as much as shee could yet neuer learne the Art so necessary vnto Prin-

ces,

ees, to pardon, it is the vndoubted opinion of many, that it will proue some hindrance to her greatnesse: for glorying in nothing more, than to be called the Doctoresse of all Nations, in the Science to be implacably-resolute, in knowing how to cut off the tops of those haughtie and luxurian Pop-pies, which in the gardens of her States doe proudly over-top others, she greatly reioycess that it be said, how in this Art, she hath excelled that great *Tarquinius*, that was the first inuentor of so mysterious a secret.

She being then so hardie and resolute in committing of seuerities, she is much perplexed in conferring of fauours, which are seldome seene to proceed from her. And those few that she bestoweth come from her with such an imperious haughtinesse, that they are not very acceptable. And yet in exterior semblance shee is all affabilitie, and wholly spends herselfe in complements. But he that with the spectacles of State-politic can prie into the inmost of her heart, shall easily perceiue, that shee is all Pride, all Auarice, all Cruelty. So that all they that haue any long time treated or negotiated with her, report, that none receiue from any other Princes more milde-honied words, and more bitter deeds. Whence it is, that as a friend she doth greatly allure men, and as a mistris much insult vpon, and terrifie them.

Her hands are beyond all due proportion long, which shee extendeth farre and neere, as occasions serue, without distinguishing of friends from foes, or stranger from kinsman. Her nailes are like an Harpies, and most griping. Her fingers are of so hard and fast-hold, that what once comes into her clutches, shee neuer lets goe againe. Her eyes are blacke, and a most sharpe piercing light. Her looke is squint, with which wisely beholding one, she fixedly looketh vpon another.

A thing of great danger vnto Princes; for of late daies, hauing bent her face towards *Algiers*, no man suspecting it, she had earnestly fixed her looke towards *Marseilles*.

In her eyes is plainly discovered a most greedy and insatiate desire, since that there is nothing that shee fixeth  
them



them vpon, but shee most greedily wisheth and couereth the same with all her heart, and that's the reason, that our obseruing Speculants say, that this Queene doth immoderately thirst after others goods, and that as yet she neuer had friend, but with her tricks, and wilie-beguilies, she hath in the end made her slaue.

All which things discover plainly vnto the world, that she is rather fit to gouerne slaues than free men. For there is no other Princeesse whatsoeuer, that more ambitiously laboureth to ingrosse and forestall all seruice into her hands, not onely from her owne subiects, but from her best friends.

She obserues so punctuall a forme of State, that she doth not so much as vouchsafe to goe meet good occasions, which infinite times haue sought her in her owne house.

She farre excelleth all other Queenes, both present and past in knowing, how vnder her rich robe of cloth of gold to paliate her priuate interest, be it neuer so diabolicall.

And although she be daily seene to commit most damnable actions, she makes no greater ostentation of any thing than of her conscience; whereby the *French*, who vnder colour of her holy and religious pretexts, haue so often beene ouer-reached, haue at last (to their no small cost) learn'd to arme themselves, and to get on horsebacke, when with a Crowne in her hand, they see her propose, or treat affaires full of religious pretexts, and sacred charitie, towards her best beloued neighbours.

She is so cunning in the exercise of riding, that she hath not onely successfullly tamed and broken the generous Coursers of *Naples*, but also the rough and skittish Mules of *Spaine*, which by a naturall instinct are wont to kick, to whinze, and bite at all men.

She is of all other Queenes of so mistrustfull a *Genius*, that, except her owne Nation, she hath declared all others (though subiect vnto her) to be of no confidence, albeit she haue diuers times, and in all occasions found them right trustie and faithfull; which point is so preiudiciall vnto her, that the most skilfull in the worlds affaires, doe probably

bly conclude, that by reason of this one most important defect, it is impossible she should grow bigger. The reason is, because there is no other Queene, that careth lesse to be beloued of her people, than she, and that endeouureth more to be feared.

And therefore doe our Politicians note this in her as a kinde of notorious follie, that shee confidently beleeueth, that with misusing and hurring all men, shee shall induce them to adore her, and with such hatefull deportments, allure all Nations to serue her: For the great store of her treasures, is the forcible Adamant, which violently attracts vnto it the mindes of some, who vtterly abhorring her, are bound to seeke, and by all meanes procure her declination.

Shee is most curious and accurate in matters of small moment, whereas in weighty and important affaires, no other Queene hath more easily suffered herselfe to be supplanted and ouer-reached.

In her discourses, and in resolving of most important businesses, she sheweth admirable wisdom, and circumspection; but whether it be through her naturall tarditie, or artifice of her officers, who are all most greedy merchants of great negotiations; or because shee is of opinion, that no resolution is done with *decorum*, that is not long a doing, and with tedious delays expected of all men.

Shee executeth her determined resolutions with such slownesse, that the face of affaires changing with the times, her resolutions determind with great wisdom, doe often proue vnhappy.

And therefore doe all conclude, that shee is more courageous in the skill of plotting machinations, than in the exercise how to manage Armes, in which she sheweth to haue an vndanted heart, a resolute constancie, and an vnspokeable sufferance of all crosses and inconueniences; but so weake in resolutions, that her extraordinarie circumspection hath many times the semblance of timiditie. Whence it followeth, that shee seemeth more apt to maintaine States, than to acquire them. Diuers notable men laugh at her, to

## 74 *The New-found Politicke.*

see her addresse and gouerne all her actions by the compasse of certaine solid and mature Counsels, without euer referring them into the hands of that Fate or Chance, which hath so greatly fauoured the *French*, and yeelded them so glorious, when in their actions and managements, they haue gouerned themselues with much valour and little braine.

There be some that thinke this hapneth, onely because she is as sparing of her owne blood, as she is thirstie and insatiate of other mens. And therefore doe the expertest Capitaines of warre mocke and gibe at her, to see her aspire at the Empirie of the whole Vniuerse without euer fighting.

The reason whereof is, because this most potent Queene, being of long time accustomed to purchase great Estates by Alliances and Mariages, she abhorreth the dreadfull custome of the *French*, to conquer kingdoms with the price and hazard of their owne dearest blood.

She being then more wittily-warie than boldly courageous, it followeth, that she is more mischieuous vnto her enemies in times of peace, than warre: whence it is, that the *French*, who hitherto haue liued with her in a supine or stupid carelesnesse, after so many calamities endured, haue at last learnt to double the barres of their doores, when they haue concluded peace with the *Spaniards*.

She is most carelesse and lauish of her owne riches, but so greedy of other mens, that shee careth not to desolate her Patrimoniall Estates, so shee may make conquest of others.

She is of so secret and hidden thoughts, and of a minde so abstruse and vnsearchable, that there is no wit, artifice, or skill of man able to looke into her drifts. Nay, *Linx* himselfe with his through-piercing sight, cannot penetrate into them, no not so much as the outside of them: whereas men of a glimmering or short sight, may plainly see into the very bowels of the *French* and other Nations.

For he that shall with iudgement goe about to describe the *Genius* and customes of so great a Princesse, must confidently



confidently belecue, that in all the managements she hath in hand, and in all the affaires that others negotiate with her, shee is inwardly cleane contrary to that shee appeareth without.

And although that among the foresaid vertues, shee be full fraught with so enormous vices, notwithstanding by reason of her prodigious fortune, all of them are interpreted and admired in her as vertues, whence it followeth, that diuers great Princes take it as an honour to imitate her in her vices.

She is of a most sturdie and robust complexion, whereby all iudge her to be long-liued.

She onely languisheth of the indisposition, to haue her limbs much distracted, which doth much debilitate the forces of so huge a bulke.

And although that with the helpe of the libertie of *Genoa*, and of the alliance shee hath with the Duke of *Sauoy*, shee vseth diuers meanes and artifices to contract them; neuerthelesse by reason of the diuersitie of the interestes of theise Potentates, she makes no great vse of them.

This mighty Princeesse receiueth no greater damage from any, than from her chiefe Spanish Officers, whom alone she imployeth in great charges, all which are by them exercised with such, and intolerable surquedrie, as they will not onely be honoured as men, but adored as Gods. An impertinencie so great, as it hath stirred vp a loathing, and nastinesse of the Spanish Dominion, not onely in the Italians, and in the Flemmings, but in the Spaniards themselves.

One thing hath caused great wonderment in all that behold so potent a Queene, which is, that her whole bodie is full of horse leeches (for the most part of *Genoa*) some of which are so big and fat, as they appeare to be of those great Eeles that come out of Holland, or those big Lampreis that breed in Seuerne It is not knowne whether it be through impotencie, or negligence, or through a destinie fatall vnto great Princes, whose vitall bloud these noysome creatures

## 76 *The New-found Politicke.*

seeke euermore to sucke, that thee endeouours not to shake them off, and be freed from them.

This most mighty Queene then, being entred into the Royall Palace before *Apollos* Imperiall Maiestie, stretched forth her left arme, causing her seruants to vnswathe the same, and so naked, shewing it vnto *Apollo*, and to the whole sacred Colledge of the learned, she thus bespake.

Imperiall Sir, and gracious father of all good letters: This which your *Maiestie* seeth; yea euen this is that stinking cauterie, and loathsome issue of *Flanders*, which the *French*, the *Germanes*, and some *Italian* Princes, that now friendly faune vpon me, together with the helpe of that formidable Virago, and transmarine Renegada made in this mine arme, for the distrust or suspicion they had of me. I acknowledge that the Princes forenamed had iust cause to be ieaious of my power, when after the death of *Henry* the second, they saw *France* fall into the wretched calamitie of Infant-Kings, and that I, in their minoritie, sought to sowe discords in that goodly kingdome.

Now that these suspicions are vanished, and that (ay me, why doe I not blush to speake it?) the contention, which I haue had with the *French*, and particularly with that vndanted limbe of the Deuill, the Prince of *Bearne*, is now ended, and that I haue at last beene condemned my selfe in all costs and charges: My humble request vnto your *Maiestie* is, that this grieuous and falseux cauterie be healed, and closed vp. For most men are of opinion, that for the infinite number of humors, that haue runne vnto it, it is now become so festred and enraged a cankre, as I feare (which God auert) it will proue the losse of my arme.

I did not passe into *Italie* through mine owne ambition, or vnquenchable thirst, wholly to sway the same, as mine enemies report. It is well knowne to all the world, that I was vntimely called thereunto, and euen haled vnto it by the Princes of *Italie* themselues, to free them from the great feare they were in of the *French*. And there is no man liuing in *Europe*, but knowes how that in the States that I possesse  
in

in *Italie*, I imploy so large a share of my stock and free-hold, as they rather serue to further my weaknesse, and keepe me still oppressed. And thrice-happy were my *Spanish* home, which I might ere now haue couered with tiles of pure silver, and flates of massie gold, had I neuer had intelligence, or dealings with the *Italian* nation, so double-hearted, so full of fallacies, so anxious of private interestes, and onely good to embarke her neighbours into dangerous affaires without bisket; and then vpon the least occasion, shake them off, and leaue them in the lurch, or in the midst of their greatest danger; as shee, that openly professeth the trickes and skill to plucke creuises out of their holes with others hands, and not with her owne.

And I haue often wondred, how *Italie*, which (as all the world knowes) hath suffred herselfe to be broken, saddled, and backt, and ridden by all strange Nations, will now stand vpon such nice punctillios of chastitie with me, who if she but see me stirre (be it neuer so little) shee presently entrench into suspition, that I goe about to rauish her of her honour and liberty.

And howbeit, the greatnesse wherein the kingdome of *France* doth now finde it selfe, may assure *Italie*, and all the forenamed Princes from the feare they haue conceined of my power; I am neuerthelessse (if it bee your *Maiesties* pleasure) ready to giue all men good caution and surety *De non offendendo*: on condiction, that this to me so loathsome and irksome issue be healed and closed vp.

By the expresse appointment of his *Maiestie*, the cauterie was with all diligence viewed and considered by the Politike Physitians, who after long and mature consultation of the whole Colledge of them, they vnanimously concluded, that it most euidently appearing, that the *Spanish* Monarchy is continually troubled with an vncessant thirst, to sway and dominere, she stands in need of that running issue, by which those grosse and peccant humors, which from *Pern* distill into her stomacke, may be purged and euacuated; for they are the cause of her vnquenchable and hydropicall thirst.



## 78 *The New-found Politicke.*

Those excellent Physicians did likewise consider, that if the said Monarchie had not that Cauterie, there were most euident danger, that the pernicious humors of *Pern*, might ascend into the head of *Italie*, to the manifest ruine of those principall members, which yet are left sound in her; and that the said Monarchie of *Spaine* might easily fall into an incurable Dropsie of an vniuersall Monarchie; against which dangerous inconueniences they affirmed, there is good prouision made with the Cauterie of the Low Countries, which ought to be kept open, so long as *Pern* (so stirring a member) doth subminister those pernicious humors vnto the *Spanish* Monarchie. This resolution did mightily displease her, wherefore in great passion and perturbation of minde, thus she brake forth: Sir, if through the spight and malignitie of others, I must so fouly languish and consume my selfe in continuall prouiding and applying vnguent for this corroding cankre, which mine enemies call a Diuertiu Fontanell, some, who haply thinke least of it, shall lay clouts and plaisters vnto it.

Her quip was presently vnderstood by the *English*, by the *French*, and by the *Italians*, who replied, that they nor feared, nor doubted of any thing; since they sent nothing into the Low Countries, but the garbage, the offals, the filths and sweepings of their States; whereas the *Spaniards* did there waste pure gold and consume vitall bloud. And therefore, both the *English*, the *French*, and the *Germanes*, to arme and secure themselves from the formidable power, boundlesse ambition, and secret machinations of the *Spaniards*, who haue no Horizon, were forced, in conformitie of the Aphorisme of the Politike *Hippocrates*, *Tacitus*, *Consilijs*, & *est res externas moliri arma procul habere.*

*The Spanish Monarchie goeth to the Oracle of Delphos, to know whether shee shall euer obtaine the Monarchie of the world; she hath a crosse answer.*

Rag. 10. 1 Part.

**Y**Ester day morning, two houres before day, the renowned Monarchie of Spaine, in great secrecie departed from *Parnassus*, in a Caroch with six horses, hauing taken but a few followers & confederates of her Court to attend her. Her departure hath ministred no small iealousie in all this Dominion, but more especially in the Monarchie of France, who was much moued thereat.

And to finde out what way she had taken, presently tooke post, and following her tracks, ouertooke her euen as she arriued in *Delphos* before the Oracle of *Apollo*; vnto whom the Spanish Monarchie presenting herselfe (as they report that were present) she proposed this question.

Oh eternall and bright lampe of the world, the right eye of heauen, who art the bringer not onely of the day, but of all goodnesse vnto mankinde.

Thou knowest that long since, all my thoughts haue bin addrested vnto that vniuersall Monarchie, vnto which none euer attained but the Romane people. Thou knowest the effusion of blood, and the profusion of treasures that I haue caused and spent, to reach vnto the goale of my intention.

Thou only knowest the teilsome vigils, the bloody sweats, the industrious practises that I haue spent, suffered, and plotted, to come vnto so important a designe.

Thou likewise knowest, that by the indefatigable dexterity

ty of my wit, by the mighty vertue of my coynce, and by the matchlesse valour of my Nation, I did not many years since sow so infinite seditions, and raised so turbulent warres in the very heart of France, on which I had laid the foundation of all my hopes, I had well nigh obtained the wished end of mine intention: And how for a finall conquest of all lets and rubs I wanted but the meanes to vnite Naples vnto Milane: which difficultie if I can once surmount, I may boldly vaunt to haue wonne the game. But since either by my fallall misfortune, or by the impossibility of the businesse, or by the power of so many cruell enemies that are risen vp against me, the scandals of the reuolutions, which with so many machinations, for the space of so long time, I had dispersed among the French, whom I could yet neuer vanquish, are in one onely day conuerted into that peace and tranquillity, that my heart is aggriued to see, and my minde abhorreth to remember; as loath to make an vtter hauocke of so many of my people I intended to employ in this enterprise, I haue almost brought them vnto a finall desolation. And because I would no longer bee a laughing stocke vnto the world, I here prostrate my selfe before thy sacred Maiestie, most submissiuely beseeching thee to giue me a direct answer, whether that vniuersall Monarchy which I haue so deeply riuerted in my heart, and which is the onely ayme of all my actions, is by the will of heauens destinated vnto me; which I desire to know, to the end if there bee no impossibility in the pursuit thereof, I may rouze vp my spirits, and by the possibility of it, keepe my Spaniards in heart. For, to tell thee the very truth, who pryest into the secretest thoughts of all men both by Sea and Land; by the infinitenelle of conspiracies, of counter-mines, and of complots, that by mine implacable enemies haue bin plotted and contriued against me, and now more than euer are practised to my detriment, I begin to faint and dispaire of any good successe.

At this exorbitant question the Temple did shake, and the earth trembled round about a great distance off, when from the mouth of the Minister of *Apollo* proceeded these words.

The



The vniuersall Monarchie shall againe returne to the farre renowned Italian Nation, at what time it shall haue banished those intestine iarres, and ciuill discords which haue brought her in bondage to forraigne and strange Nations.

After so dolefull an answer, the Spanish Monarchie, full of spight and anguish came forth of the Temple, but confounded with amazement when shee saw the Monarchy of France present her selfe before her, whom (hauing first entertained with some ordinary complements) shee tooke by the hand, drew her apart, and friendly imparted vnto her the answer that the Oracle had giuen her.

And how the vniuersall Monarchie was by diuine providence like to return vnto the Italian Nation; which thing succeeding, France should finde and feele new *Iulius Caesars*, as Spaine second *Scipioes*.

And that to secure and settle their affaires, shee thought there was no better way than to share and diuide Italy equally betweene them.

Moreouer she offered to teach her the secret that she most successfullly had experimented in the Indies, by vertue of which, they might both assure themselves of the Italian Nation, in such sort as there should no memorie be left in the world of so wicked a race of men but the bare name. Vnto whom the French Monarchie framed this answer,

Oh Spaine, first suffer me to forget that most vnfortunate diuision of the Kingdome of Naples, which my King *Lewis* the twelfth made with thee, and then we will confer of this matter. For, know Spaine, it is not so easie a thing to consen and iniurie the French the second time, as I see you perswade your selfe.

Then as touching the secret you propose vnto mee, how wee may assure our selues of the Italians, I pray you doe you attempt it and put the same in execution, since to desart and desolate the world of people (as you haue done and practised in the Indies) and to dominere ouer a bare land void of inhabitants, is a certaine politicke precept that is not found in the Register of the French reason of State. For, I haue

(and that to mine owne cost) learnt to bee contented with a little so it be good.

And therefore doe I found my greatnesse more on the multitude of good subiects, than on the wide extent of a Kingdome.

And so that my French Nation may liue at ease and commodiously in this world, I am well pleased to admit of other Nations therein.

The negotiation of the concord of Italy is long and tedious; and you know by good experience, that purges giuen to assure a man from a disease he feareth, do many times hasten the same.

I will not omit with the Genuine liberty, that is proper to my nature, confidently to tell you, how that the enterprize to subdue all Italy, is not so easie a taske as I perceiue you apprehend to your selfe. For, when I had such toys in my head, which to me proued most pernicious, and I verily beleue will proue no better to you, I thought as you thinke now: and I haue manifestly discovered, that the Italians are a kinde of creatures that are euer more warily vigilant how to escape our hands, and who can neuer bee tamed, or brought vnder the yoke of strangers bondage. And although as most subtile Apes, and crafty Monckies, they easily transforme themselues into the customes and fashions of those Nations that sway them, yet doe they euer keepe fixed in their hearts their ancient malice and hatred.

They are great Merchants of their seruitude, which they trafficke and trucke so cunningly, that if they but once put on a paire of Breeches after the cut of *Madrill*, they will induce you to beleue that they are become true and perfect Spaniards; and if they weare but a great Folio ruffe of Cambricke, we presently thinke them to bee turned into right French-men.

But come once to the close or vpsnot of any businesse with them, they will then shew you more teeth than can be found in fifty bundles of handsawes, or a thousand combes.

And Italy doth iustly resemble those greedy and couetous  
Dames

Dames, who with the strong and sharpe lye of their blandishments scald their vnheedy louers, but neuer let them come to the iouissance and fruition of that which they most desire.

And therefore beleecue me (who haue to my no small cost made tryall of it) concerning the conquest of Italy, you shall in the end reape nothing but losse and shame.

*Philip the second of that name, King of Spaine, after long strife about his Title, makes his solemne entrie into Parnassus.*

Rag. 12. 3 Part.

**T**HE most Mighty King of Spaine, *Philip* the second, who (two moneths since) arriued in this Court, could not before yesterday bee admitted to make his publike and solemne entrance. The reason hath bin, because that in certaine triumphant Pageants which the Spanish Nation hath with royall magnificence erected vnto him, there were fairely written, these words;

*Philippo secundo Hispaniarum; utriusque Sicilia, & Indiarum Regi Catholico, Italia pacis Auctoris felicissimo.*

Which words, for so much as they were somewhat distastfull vnto most of the Italian Princes, they instantly required that they might be cancelled and blotted out, saying, that (vpon no terms) they would neuer acknowledge that peace of Italy from the Spaniards, which themselves so dearly, and with such vast summes of ready money purchased of the Hollanders and Zelanders.

This Aromaticall contestation was long debated and canuast to and fro. And although the Italian Princes did concludingly prooue in iudgment, that the present peace of



## 84 *The New-found Politicke.*

Italy did not directly proceed from any well-meaning sincerity of the Spaniards, who if they might haue had their wils, would haue enthralled the same, had not that great diuersion bin made to them, but ought wholly to be acknowledged from the warres in the Low-Countries.

Now in the greatest heat of this controuersie, the Queene of Italy, with her wonted wisdom, interposing her selfe, appealed the same, who hauing conuoked all her Princes, she exhorted them to leaue all vaine ostentations and spungy vauntings vnto the Spaniards, and meditating on reall and substantiall subiects, continue to feed them with vapourous smoake.

The Horse-troope, both for the quality and number of the Princes that concurred to fauour, to court, to attend, and to serue so great a King, was the most numerous and the most honourable that euer was seene in *Parnassus*. So was this mighty King ranked among those Monarchs, which in the world haue bin more famous for their wisdom and sagacity, than for their courage or valour in warre. Moreover, the Impresa which hee caried in his royall Standard made all the learned of this Court to wonder, which was a faire painted Writing-pen, by vertue of which it did euidently appeare by the testimony of some Historians, that both in the most potent Kingdome of France and elsewhere, where any fit occasion had beene offered vnto him to make vse of it, hee had caused and stirred vp more and greater ruines, spoiles, rapines, wracks, and hauocks, than euer his Father *Charles* the first could cause or effect with the greatest part of the Cannons of Europe.

The Impresa was highly commended by the sacred Colledge of the vertuous: All Writers taking it for a great honour vnto themselves, that a Pen in the hand of one that had knowne how to vse it, had archieued and effected so memorable and remarkable actions.

This great King hath still bin most royally entertained in *Parnassus*; for, euen the chiefe and most eminent Monarkes in Europe haue held it as an honourable reputation,

to be able to attend and serue him.

So that euen the next day after his ingresse into this Dominion, being disposed to be trimmed, & to commit himselfe into the hands of a Barber, the great Queene of England disdained not all the while to hold the Bason vnder his Chinne.

And the most renowned martiall King of France, *Henry* the fourth, surnamed the Great, tooke it for a matchlesse glory to himselfe to be admitted to wash his head, which hee performed with so exquisite skill and artificiall dexterity, as he seemed to bee borne in that exercise, and brought vp Prentise in that trade.

Although some enuious detractors haue giuen out, that he did it without any Sope or Washing-ball, but with strong scalding Lye alone.

This mighty Monarke hath bin presented by all the vertuous of *Parnassus*; with diuers gifts of Poetrie, and other quaint and much elaborated Poems, all which hee hath counterchanged with great liberality, and bounty.

And to a certaine learned man who presented him with an excellent discourse, wherein was demonstrated the way and meanes, how, and in what manner most noble *Partenope*, and all the most flourishing Kingdome of Naples, which by the vnsufferable outrages of the Soldiers, by the robberies of the Iudges, by the tyrannous extortions of the Barons, and by the general rapins and ransakings, which the griping and greedy Vice-royes that from Spain are sent thither, onely to cram and fatten themselues, is now brought vnto extreme misery and delolation, might be restored vnto the ancient greatnesse of its splendor, he gaue a reward of twenty Duckats of gold, and consigned the said discourse vnto his Confessour, commanding him to keepe it safe, for that it was written very honestly and religiously; whereas vnto a most cunning and sufficient Politician, who deliuered him a very long Treatise, but altogether contrary to the first, as that which treateth of politicke precepts, and sheweth what course is to bee held to depresse and afflict the said

## 86 *The New-found Politicke.*

kingdome of Naples, lower and more than now it is. And how it may with facility bee reduced vnto such misery and calamity, as that generous Courcer w<sup>ch</sup> the Seggio of State, without any headstall or saddle, hath hitherto (with no happy successe) borne for an Impresse or recognisance, may bee compelled patiently to beare a Pack-saddle or Panier, to carry any heauypacke or burden; yea, and to draw in a Cart.

For so much as hee was informed that it was iudiciously compiled, and according to the right termes of moderne Policy, hee assigned a gift of twelue thousand Crownes rent a yeare, and moreouer made him a Grand of Spaine.

*The Dogs of the Indies are become Wolves.*

Rag. 22. 3. Part.

**O**N the night of the twelfth of this present, about eight of the clocke, arriued in post-haste a Currier dispatched from *Lisbone* vnto *Apollo*, who told his *Maiestie*, that he had brought him most important newes from the *West-Indies*. The next morning very early, all the learned ran to the Court, to heare some newes. And the *Spaniards* were the first, who with great anxietie inquired, whether there had lately beene discovered some other mount of *Petosis*, or a new *Rio del Plata* in the *Indies*, which if it were, they would speedily haste thither, to plant the holy word of God.

The *French* were very importunate to know, whether some new world had beene found out, which with making the *Spaniards* more powerfull, might helpe them vterly to subuert the old-one.

*Apollo* had no sooner read the letters, but he fell into a trance of sorrow; and hauing inuolued himselfe into a foggie mist, a shower of abundant brackish teares was seene



to trickle downe his cheeks; which was taken for a most disastrous presage: by which sudden alteration, all men iudged, that the Post had brought very bad newes.

Now whilst all the Court was full of all sorts of learned and vertuous men, who in great anxierie longed to vnderstand the cause of his *Maiesties* publike sadnesse; after sundry clattrings of thunder, and infinite flashings of lightnings, which they heard and saw, there was heard an horrible and dreadfull voice, which said:

Oh you, that inhabit the Earth; fast, macerate, and cloath your selues with haire-cloth; sprinkle your selues with ashes; eat your bread with teares; endeavour with humble prayers to allwage the wrath of God; and with contrite hearts, and penitent soules, suppliantly beseech him, that of his infinite mercy, he will vouchsafe, to deliuer all humane kinde, inhabiting the old world, from those portentous and monstrous nouelties, which wee certainly vnderstand to haue lately hapned in the new. At so vnexpected, and prodigious aduertisements, infinite of the Vertuous, by the wounding affliction that they felt in their hearts, fell downe in a swoone, thinking verily that the *West Indies* had beene utterly consumed by fire, or ouerwhelmed by the furie of mercilesse waters.

In this terror and dismall plight, all the people in *Par-nassus*, with showers of teares, with throbbing sobs, with groning howlings, with loud-shrill voices, as the like were neuer heard, cride for Mercy, Mercey: and with most submissiue intreatings and groanes besought *Apollo*, that hee would daigne to impart vnto his deuout subiects, what those mischiefes were, from which they should intreat the immortal God to be deliuered.

Then from the aforesaid Court of his *Maiestie* was heard a second voice, which gaue all men to vnderstand, that the dogs which the *Spaniards* had transported into the *Indies* for the safegard of their flocks of sheepe, were all become such rauenous wolues, that in worrying and deuouring of fleeced cattle, they exceeded the voracitie and cruelty of the greedy Tigres.

After

## 88 *The New-found Politicke.*

After so drearie and vnhappy tidings, all the learned in *Parnassus* burst forth into wailfull cries, and lamentable skreeks, dolefully complaining, that if the dogs, which were placed for the guard & safetie of the sheepe, became wolues, so rauenous, as they deuoured whole flocks; vnto what Gardians might Shepherds hereafter recommend the keeping and safe custodie of their sheepe?

And their flocks being now destitute of the protection of dogs, who haue alwaies beene so faithfull vnto their Masters and Shepherds, how could it be possible, but that the whole Genus and kinde of sheepe must needs decay and perish through all the world, and become the most vnhappy creatures of all others, since they must be a prey both to the Wolues their enemies, and to the Dogs their friends?

Whilest all the Nations of *Parnassus* (surprised by so great terror) were all dismaid, fainting, swooning, and groueling on the ground, onely the *Flemmings* and the people of the *Low Countries*, were seene all dreadlesse and vndismaid, to runne leaping vp and downe *Parnassus*, encouraging all men to pull vp a good heart, to be of good cheere, and neuer droope or faint: for there was no calamitie nor miserie could or be threatned or inflicted on mankinde, which by an vndaunted resolution, and resolute minde, might not be or diuered or auoided.

And with loud acclamation they gaue all men to vnderstand, that euen in their owne Countries, those dogs and currs, which the *Spanish* shepherds had sent for the guard of the *Flemmish* and *Belgick* flocks, were transformed into such rauenous wolues, as with their fierce immanitie, and fell brutishnesse, they deuoured all their sheepe; and that ere this they would haue woorryed the whole race and flocks of the *Low Countries*, if by the resentment of that bold and couragious determination (now famous through all the world) they had not provided a sound remedie for it. And therefore, if those mischiets should befall the old world, which (as the report was) were hapned to the new, they wished all men to know, that the true and only remedie, to  
 chastise

chastise those Currs, tainted with that foule fault, to woorrie, to rapine and deuoure harmlesse sheepe, was, to giue them some *Holland-Nux-vomica*, and (as they deserued) make them to vomit out their very heart, and burst and burst.

*The French are humble sutors vnto Apollo, to know the secret, how to perfume gloues after the Spanish fashion.*

Rag. 9. 3 Part.

**T**HE emulation that raigneth betweene the two most warlike, martiall, and mighty nations, the *French*, and the *Spanish*, is as great as eternall.

For there appeareth no vertue in the *French*, that is not most ambitiously sought after by the *Spaniard*. And the *French* is neuer quiet vntill he haue attained vnto all the rarities wherewith he seeth *Spaine* endowed.

Now forsomuch as the skill or sleight of the perfuming and tempring of Amber, with which they make their gloues so sweetly odoriferous, is the peculiar inuention and meere endowment of the *Spaniards*; The *French* haue omitted no manner of pursuit, to finde out, and attaine the perfection, how to make the like. For they haue with anxious labour, and to their cost provided themselues of Muske, of Amber-greese, of Ziuert, and of all the most aromaticall drugs, that the Orient affordeth; but all proued vaine and effectlesse.

For neither their cost, nor all their diligence haue beene sufficient, to make them obtaine the end of their wished intention: yet rather than they would giue ouer their pursuit as desperate, the thrice noble *French* nation had recourse vnto *Apollos Maiestie*, as the onely producer of all Aromatiques and sweet gums, whom shee hath most instantly be-



## 90 *The New-found Politicke.*

sought to vouchsafe to teach her the true way, how to perfume gloues with Amber-greese, wherein the *Spaniard* is so cunning.

It is most certaine, that *Apollo* was neuer seene to laugh so heartily, no not when he saw the downefall of vnhappy *Dedalus*, as he did at the impertinent request of those *French* futors, whose hands he commanded his Priests, that were about him, to smell vnto. And that they should make a true report what they smelt of, the Priests presently obeyed; and told his *Majestie*, that they had no ill fauour, but smelt very sweet. Which *Apollo* hearing, he told the *French*, that Nature did euermore counterchange others defects with some rare vertue or other. And therefore had he conferred the gift, to make sweet-smelling gloues only vnto that Nation, whose hands were so ranke, that they did euer stinke worse than any carrion.

---

*Why the Monarchy of Spaine is lately retired into  
her Palace.*

Rag. 14. 3 Part.

---

**F**Orsomuch as many daies were past since the Monarchie of *Spaine* had shewed her selfe in publike, and hath not onely euer since, liued as a recluse in her owne house, but hath continually kept all the doores thereof fast shut.

The *Italian* Princes, and aboue all the *Venetians*, not only most diligent searchers into mens thoughts, but carefull and studious obseruers of that great *Queenes* actions, seeing so strange an alteration, entred into anxious and great iea-lousies. And because it hath neuer bene possible for them or any other to know, what her so sudden retirednesse might signifie, all men did argue, that it could not be without some secret myserie.

The

The *Venetians* for ieaiousie of their owne Estates, impatient of delayes, by ladders set vp against the walls of her palace, entred in at the windowes thereof, and saw that she was very busie with one of her chiefe officers, called the *Marquis Spinola*, labouring hard with diuers rare and artificiall engines, to stop all the holes, gaps, chinks, and creuisses in and about her house. And wondring not a little, to what end she should doe it; they presently aduertised their friends speedily to arme and prepare themselues; for so soone as the *Spaniards* should haue stopped all the gaps and holes of any supply, helpe, or succour, they would assuredly giue chase to all the mice and rats, and make an vniuersall slaughter of them.

---

*How the ministers and officers of Spaine are continually interested in their priuate profit.*

Rag. 20. 3 Part.

---

**T**Hree daies are now past, when about nine of the clock at night, there were scene to enter forty cart loads of hay into the Royall Palace of the Monarchie of *Spaine*. And forsomuch as the strange and vnseasonable houre, made the *French*, the *Venetians*, and other Potentates, who liue in continuall ieaiousie of the greatnesse of so formidable a Princessse, to suspect some mischief, there was speedy search and diligent inquirie made, to know the mysterie of so strange prouision; and whether vnder that hay, the carts might be laden with any vnlawfull and forbidden goods.

Whereupon many Spies were set a worke about it, who found out, and reported, that vnder the hay there were hidden and stowed certaine chests full of mattocks, spades,

pick-axes, and shouels. And because these are instruments and tooles belonging to Pioners, Sappers, Diggers, and labouring-men, the *French* presently resolved to arme themselves. And the *Venetians* were about to lanch their Gallies from out their Arsenall into the Sea; when by some Politicians it was aduised, before they should discover their intencion, to finde out, whether the *Spaniards* had at any time before made prouision of such tooles or implements, & whether they expected to receiue any more else-whence. But they were vndoubtedly assured, that before that time they had neuer receiued any, nor did hereafter looke for any more.

The said did besides certifie vnto them, that so soone as the said chefts were vnladen, they were not caried into the royall Armorie or common Magazin, but that all the Grandes of *Spaine*, and the chiefe Officers of so potent a Monarchie, did presently diuide those spades, mattocks, scoopes, shouels, pick-axes among themselves; with which the very next day very early they began to dig ditches, to draw rills, to conuey riuclers, to direct gullets, to reare banks, to frame scluses, and to fill the country with aqueducts, and water-pipes, with such labour, paine, and diligence (euey man drawing all the water he could procure to his owne mill) as they had brought all publike matters, and the whole State to such miserie, and calamitie, that the mills of the communitie of *Spaine*, for want of water, could nor goe, nor worke, nor grinde.

---

Apollo

---



Apollo hauing used all possible meanes, and exquisite diligence, to haue some one of the Court-Mignons, or Princes-Idols taken and apprehended, doth seuerely proceed against one lately fallen into the hands of the Iudges.

Rag. 5. 2 Part.

**A**pollo (to his infinite grieffe) being come to a perfect knowledge of the most enormous disorder, which the shamefull blindnesse of those Princes caueth, no lesse in great Empires, than in pettie Principalities, who commit that vn pardonable excelsse, to subiect and enuall themselves vnto a base and new vp-start seruant of theirs, since neither his Maiesties continuall exhortations, nor the frightfull calamities, which for the said foule excessses an infinite number of Princes hath suffred and smarted for, hath beene of force to remoue them from that hard destinie, by which they seeme violently to be drawne, to precipitate into the bottomlesse whirlpools of so outragious inconueniences; forsomuch as he would not abandon the protection (a quality proper to his Maiestie) of the gouernours of mankinde.

Some few moneths are now past, since he resolved with all rigour to persecute those seruants, that with their prodigious ambition, and artificiall tricks (altogether diabolicall) vnder take to rule and gouerne their Lord and Master. And therefore did his Maiestie not many yeares since publish most grieuous mulcts, and rich rewards, to be inflicted ypon the offenders, and giuen to those that should reueale any such vnto his Iudges.

Two weekes are now past since one of these varlets, hauing bin accused vnto the Magistrate, was presently apprehended and laid vp, who by many euidences being found foule and guilty, was laid vpon the racke, where he confessed all the horrible tricks, shifts, wiles, circumuentions, masks, and detestable iuglings, that he had vsed and practised, not onely to induce his Master to become his slaue, but euen to adore and worship him.

*Apollo* hauing read and considered the proccesse and enditement against that monstrous villaine, fell into a strange amazement, how those Princes (who are so greedy of domination that they often fall into moody ieaiousies, and vn-naturall suspicions, not onely of strangers, but of their own children) may or can (either through their owne gullishnesse, or monstrous fraud of others) fall into that reproachfull infamie, to become vassals, and euen slaues vnto a base rascally seruant of theirs.

And hee thought it a most portentous case, that there should bee found both Sonnes and Nephews vnto Princes, who to obtaine the goale, to dominere ouer their fathers, and to Lord it ouer their Vneles, had shewed spirits full of ambition, and minds extremely thirsty, to sway and command, and by cunning policies, and politike mysteries, had attained the garland of their desires, the very same men shortly after, could themselves fall or decline into that abhominable metamorphosis, to forgoe their domination purchased with so great care, anguish, wiles, and sweat, and make one their superiour, that is so farre their inferiour.

A wonder so rare and extrauagant, as humane wit can no more giue a reason for, than of the hidden verue of the Adamant stone.

*Apollo*, to the end that by the exemplary punishment of that darling Courtier, Princes might learne some so profitable document, as might in some sort terrifie them from committing so hateful indignities, three daies since he summoned all the Princes now resident in this Court, to appeare before him in the great Audience-Chamber. In presence of whom,

to their greater confusion, with a loud and intelligible voice, caused the abominable enditement, framed against that villanous varlet, to be read by *Bossius*, his Maiesties Clarke of the Crowne, who being demanded what tricks, course, or art he had vsed to reach vnto the end, so absolutely to ouer-  
sway & govern his Lord and Master, answered, that the very first day he came to the Court, he wholly applyed his minde and wits, exactly, and with all diligence punctually to obserue the Genius of the Prince, which hauing found to be naturally inclined vnto lust and luxury, he with gentle, plausible, and cunning artificiall manners, did presently to apply himselfe to commend a vice so vnworthy a man that hath the charge and government of a State committed vnto him (as if inactionnesse had bin an egregious and laudable verrue.)

And how he vsed all possible industrie to become his instrument or minister in them: which hauing easily obtained, he employed all possible industrie to prouide him with most obscene instruments to fulfill his filthy lust: and that afterwards, vnder diuers pretexts and sundry colours, he had industriously laboured, that all those vertuous, honest, and honourable seruants about the Prince, whom he knew or suspected might reclaim him vnto a debonaire and vertuous life, should be remoued or discharged from the Court as vicious and professed enemies to the Prince and State; yea, some he had put to open shame and disgrace, and others he had blinded with false and furnished offices, places, titles, and honours.

And had in their places aduanced and substituted some of his owne creatures, dependants and confidents, who were all deeply plunged into all manner of carnall sensuality and brutish lasciuiousnesse, by whose meanes and furtherance (he affirmed) to haue employed all his study and care that his Lord and Master should be yearly depriued, and shake off some commendable and genuine endowment, which by nature, and from his former education hee had attained vnto, and had after that wrought, that vnder colour of being false and disloyall, all the old Officers of the State, were or  
discharged



discharged or expelled the Court, whose iust condolances and grievances he had pourtraid and represented vnto him as seditious railings and petulant detractions: and had so preuailed with him that their important charges and offices were all conferred vpon men without iudgement, without wisdom, without honesty, or without charity towards their Princes welfare, or priuate interest; hauing in recompence required nothing at their hands but confidence, secrecie, and a strict adherence to his owne affaires; by whose meanes hee had so beset, besotted, and circumgired his Lord and Master, that it was neuer possible afterward for truth (which as the shadow to the body should perpetually and inseparably bee vnited vnto a Prince) to come to his notice or eares, by the relation of any well meaning or faithfull friend to him or the State.

And that afterwards to the end he alone might absolutely rule, and vncontrouledly sway the State, hee had so fairely allured him to sloth and idlenesse, that hee brought him to be plunged euen vp to the eyes in pleasures of Gardens, in recreations of countrey houses, and in sports of hunting and hauking: nay, he had so far preuailed with him, that hee abhorred as things most hatefull to heare of State-matters, or of his proper interestes.

And had besides induced him to beleue that his treacherous plots and practises to make him fall out with his owne Sonne, and other Princes of his blood, was an vnfaigned zeale of inward loue and hearty affection towards him: a spotlesse charity towards the publike benefit of his people: and that by his quaint artifices and iugling trickes, hee had brought him to be so stolid, so stupid, & so gullish, that the manifest and insolent tyranny of his base seruant (knowne & abhorred by the simplest of his state) was by the vnfortunate Prince, named to be a vigilant regard to his seruice, an easing of him from paines, a disburthening of him from cares, and a charity towards the Common-weale; and that sloth, idlenesse, litherness, and carelesse negligence was an honourable rest and quiet repose.

And

And moreouer, to the end his Prince might neuer awaken or rouze himselfe from out his drowzie and shamefull lathesleepe, and by opening his eyes, come to the knowledge of his owne stolidity, idiotisme, and gullishnesse, and so discouer others trecherous ambition, hee had filled his Court with Flatterers, Parasites, and Sicophants, who with plausible blandishments, and infamous perswasions, extolled and commended his silly vnaptnesse to bee a matchlesse valour: the generall hatred of his people, to be a louing and vnfaigned affection: all publike railings and detractions to be exaggerated praises; confusion and disorder to be a perfect gouernment, the tyranny of a lewd villain to be honourable and carefull seruice, extormions to be sacred iustice, lauish prodigality to be vertuous liberality, his abiect lithernesse, and crauen timidity in hauing so basely neglected and abandoned the helme and gouernment of his State, he commended to be right honorable labours, diligent endeouours, and politicke gouernment. All these perfidious treacheries being confessed by that false wretch, so amazed and terrified those Princes that heard them, that with a loud voice they all cride out, that, to become most rigorously cruell against so impious and wicked a villaine, with Gallows, Gibbets, Rackes, Wheelles, Halters, Axen, Tortures, Flames, and bloody weapons, were true and charitable piety and pittie. And therefore they should all ioyntly become Suiters vnto *Perillus*, to deuise some new kinde of torment, as might dilaniate and teare in peeces that monster of nature, and yet not depriue him of life; to the end there might neuer more be found a man that durst dare to commit so hainous and outragious villanies. And all the Princes were so moued with the foulenesse of that enditement, as vnanimously they all besought his Maiestie to shew some extraordinary rigors against those, who by the fraudulent wiles and exorbitant trickes of their seruants, suffer themselves to so vituperous and shamefull a state.

Now for so much as by this vertuous instance intimated by those Princes vnto *Apollo*, his Maiesties minde was so

moued

## 98 *The New-found Politicke.*

moued to compunction, that teares were seene to trickle downe his cheekes, some Idiots that stood by, deemed this to proceed from the excessive contentation which *Apollo* felt, to heare the great horrour, whereby Princes had embraced and fostered that vice, which his Maiesty so much desired they should shun and derest. But the wisest and best of the Vertuous that were present at that act, knew very well, that *Apollo* wept and bewailed the vnhappy blindnesse of those inebriated and infatuated Princes, who abhorring their owne excesses in others, did most instantly require, that those vices into which the greatest number of them were imperceptibly, and at vnawares plunged ouer head and eares, might with some extraordinary and rigorous seuerity be punished. So mischieuous and pernicious is that reproachfull and detestable vice in Princes to idolatrize *Mignons*, which they exactly perceiuing, and extreemly blaming in others, they neuer see, but rather fauour and commend in themselves. And whom doe wee see fall into this foule fault, and shamefull error, but such as make most ostentation to bee the *Aristarco's* and reformers of the world?

---

*The*

---



*The whole race or Genus of Sheepe send their  
publike Ambassadors to Apollo, by whom they  
earnestly entreat him to grant them sharp teeth  
and long hornes : whose suit is by his Maiesty  
scorned and reiected.*

Rag. 88. 1 Part.

**T**HE whole Race or Corporation of Sheepe haue  
sent foure Ambassadors to this Court, which this  
present morning haue bin admitted by his Maie-  
stie to haue a royall audience. Whereupon a great  
and goodly Magistrall *Ram* of Lincolne-shire, in an articu-  
late bleating voice vttered these words ;

That the Sheepe knew very well, that that God, who had  
created all things, had vsed so great charity and impartiall  
iustice towards all sorts of liuing creatures, as he had recom-  
penced the defects and imperfections of some with other  
equivalent endowments of vse and vertue. So that in so in-  
finite a multitude of bruit Animals, there was not one that  
might iustly complaine to haue in its creation receiued any  
wrong at his diuine Maiesties hands.

But yet it seemed vnto them that (as a step-fire) hee had  
shewed great partiality onely with the Sheepe, forsomuch as  
hauing created them with diuers imperfections, it did not  
appeare that hee had endowed them with any equivalent  
vertue by or with which they might (if not assure their state)  
yet at least bee able to liue in this world with that safety and  
quiennesse that other creatures did.

For although his diuine Maiestie had created the Hare  
with wondrous timidity, with sharpe teeth, and without a

## 100 *The New-found Politicke.*

heart to bite, he had nevertheless endowed her with so swift a foot as did assure her from the tushes or fangs of the fiercest beast.

And that the Fox could not iustly find her selfe agrieved to haue beene created slow of foot, his Maiesty hauing endowed her with such sagacity of wit, as shee could with facility auoid the wiles, the snares or ambushes of any wild beast. And that hee had so recompenced the slownesse of the Wolues running with so hardy an heart, with so keene a tooth, with so circumspect a genius, as being a terrour to all beasts, hee makes himselfe to be awed and respected of men.

Moreouer it euidently appeared, that his Maiesty had vsed the same charity vnto the Fowle and birds of the aire, since that vnto those to whom hee had denied the speedy vse of their feet, he had in recompence giuen them larger wings, and a swifter flight, namely to Pheasants, to Partridges, and to Quailes, who in requitall of their short wings and traine feathers had the nimbleness of their feet. And that the silly Sheepe onely, hauing bin created with so blockish a stupidity of wit, heartlesse, slow-footed, and without those keen biting teeth, with which other beasts make themselves to be awed and respected.

They thought themselves forsaken and reiected by that diuine Maiesty and charity that had manifested so great dilection and louingnesse, euen vnto wild, fierce, and hurtfull Beasts.

The said goodly tall *Ram* added moreouer, that to fill vp the measure of the incomparable calamity of the harmlesse and disarmed sheepe, his Maiesty had allotted the Lions, the Tigres, the Beares, the Wolues, (being the most cruell and blood-thirsty Beasts that wander vpon earth) to bee their fatal and implacable enemies.

So that it seemed that the poore Sheepe were created only to feed and to be a prey to those enraged and furious beasts, that know not what satiety meaneth. Hee said moreouer, that vnto the vnsupportable injuries which the Sheepe recei-  
ued

ued daily from their enemies, were likewise added the outrages and misusages which their owne Shepherds continually heaped vpon them; all which proceeded because they were so disarmed & weaponles: For, if they might be so happy, as but once in ten yeares, if not for reuenge, at least for correction, vpon certaine occasions, to haue teeth allowed them to bite certaine cruell and indiscreet Shepherds, who milke them without charity, and sheare them without discretion, peraduenture they should bee more kindly and better dealt withall. And their Shearers, or rather Shauers, would more gently handle their Sheares, and not hurt or teare their skinne.

And therefore the whole kinde or race of Sheepe, that they may no longer bee the load-stone or subiect of most wailefull oppressions, doe most instantly beseech his sacred Maiesty, to haue long teeth and sharpe hornes granted them to bite & gore their enemies, that so they may become more respected and better esteemed.

To this rammish request *Apollo* answered with a blith and chearefull countenance, that the Sheepe had made a request suitable and worthy their silly simplicity, since they know not how among all the foure-footed Creatures that liue vpon the earth, no one can be found more faouored and priuiledged than they; for, whereas others are with numberlesse cares and infinite dangers enforced to shift and sharke for food, diuers of which are constrained to imploy the night (ordained for sleep and rest) to feed and sustaine themselves, as not daring to be seene by day; only for the Sheep, euen by men (who are Lords ouer all wild beasts, and possessors of the earth) Pastures and Fields are provided, reserued, and with carefulnesse and labour hired, purchased, and manured at excessiue and deare rates.

And that in darke and stormy nights, in foule weather, and at all times, they alone were carefully provided for, charitably fed, tenderly watched, and diligently guarded in their folds, yea, and defended from their hurtfull foes. And whereas other creatures were continually hunted, chased, and



and pursued by many sorts of other rauinous wilde beasts, and entrapped by the wiles and deuises of men; for whose destruction infinite people apply themselues to nothing more than to weaue nets, to frame toiles, to lay springes, to set traps, to hide ginnes, to dig pit-falls, and to breed, to teach, and to feed dogs.

Onely the Sheepe by an especiall grace and prerogatiue, enioyed the noble priuiledge, to haue men labour so industriously for them, and to shield them from so infinit dangers; and that the Creator of this vniuerse had made demonstration of especiall predilection towards the whole race of Sheepe, who in lieu of rauinous teeth, goring hornes, and swift legs, had graciously granted them the powerfull and subduing weapons of rich wooll, of nourishing milke, of dainty cheefe, and of diuers other sorts of vnualueable riches, with which they so forestalled and possessed the loue of men, that for the endeared charity that they beare to all Sheepe, they vncessantly hunt, chase, pursue, and destroy Wolues, Tigres, Beares, Foxes, Lions, and all other wild and rauinous beasts, which loue not Sheepe, with all manner of armes, rapine, or bloody cruelty.

And how by reason of the singular gifts and incomparable benefits that Sheepe bring to all mankind, being reputed the onely deliciousnesse, delight, and wealth of man, it came to passe that they were the most numerous race or kind of creatures that liue vpon the earth; so that the Sheepe being nourished, fed, cherished, guarded and defended by the vigilancy, care, cost, paines, & charity of their Shepheards, they shewed themselues very simple and foolish in desiring to haue deuouring sharpe teeth, and long goring hornes. And at last *Apollo* said, That concerning the severity of some Shepheards in milking and shearing of them, they ought to vse no other weapons to reuenge themselues, than those of dutifull obedience and humility, with yeelding them store of wooll, plenty of milke, abundance of cheefe; and aboue all, to study fertility and fruitfulness.

This being the supreme felicity of the brood and race of Sheepe,

Sheepe, that those Shepheards who misuse and enill intreat their flocks, are in extremity cruell vnto themselves; is being most certaine, that a wound rashly giten to a Sheepe, hath the propriety to kill the Shepherd. And therefore he straitly commanded them, to take greater heed to manifest the least inclination or shew to bite their Shepheards, than they would doe of Wolues keene teeth, since those Sheepe cannot be accounted so happy, which with all humility and prostrate obedience, do warrant and guard their Shepheards from all harme and danger, as those most vnhappy, that make a dismall profession, to terrifie and make them afraid.

*In a publike congresse or Assembly, contrary to the accustomed manner of the Phœbean Court, Force hauing pretended to preceed Reputation; that illustrious Lady with an excellent resolution, maintaineth her reputation and credit which was in some danger.*

*Rag. 15. 2 Part.*

**T**Hat the Lady Reputation in all publike places and assemblies hath yet euer had the precedence and right hand of Lady Force, is well knowne in *Parmaſſus*. But it fortun'd the other morning, that whilest *Apolla* made his solemn entrance into the signe of *Leo*, *Force* (according to her terrible genius, borne vnto insolencies) dared to presume to preceed *Reputation*, who, if in that occasion (making use of her admirable dexterity) shee had not knowne to retort and put by so dangerous a rub, and vnexpected stop, shee had vndoubtedly receiued some notable affront.

She

She was neuertheless much offended at the foule petulancy offered her by her capitall enemy, whereupon the vertuous, euer much deuoted vnto so excelsse a Princesse, ceased not to encourage her, exhorting her by no meanes to pocket vp the insolency of her temerity. And moreouer, bade her to remember, that she was the right arme of all Potentates, and the sole instrument wherwith Princes Lorded and swaied the world. And therefore willed her to pull vp a good heart, and resolute to confront that fondly rash Dame, whom with the only Maiesty of her countenance she would at the first encounter so daunt and abate her pride, that (as a thousand times it had come to passe) shee might with great facility suppress and bring vnder.

With wondrous reposednesse of minde, and gentle words, Reputation answered those vertuous men her louing friends who so comforted her, that shee exceedingly valued and loued the ready good will, which she perceiued in them all; but she could neither commend nor follow the counsell they gaue her. And that they should call to minde, that the whole of the power of her authoritie and greatnesse being founded, not on the forces of strong-armed Armies, nor on the strength and securitie of inexpugnable citadels, but on the bare opinion of men; a thing most inconstant and variable. So as it behoued her, in this her aduersitie, to proceed with great caution, and admirable dexteritie. And that betwene her, and Force, there was a monstrous great disparity: for if Force were once vanquished, shee might easily reconer her selfe, and with greater impetuositie attempt a second battell, so much the more dangerous for her; for to her ordinarie power shee might ioyne the violence of Disdain, and the shame of her first overthrow. But if it should happen, that at the first shock shee did not quell her enemy, either with the maiestie of her presence, or with the authoritie of her looke, so that as an Elephant, which being once fallen to the ground can neuer rise againe, she might destroy her, shee should wholly be deprived of that greatnesse and awfull respect, which the publike veneration of the common people bred in her.

Consi-



Considerations so much the more necessarie in her, as she had experienced, that nothing is more perillous for her, than by force of Armes to seeke to maintaine that auctoritie great, and that reputation on foot, which shee seeth to bee founded but on the bare opinion of the vulgar popular. And that shee hoped to provide for the indemnitie of her auctoritie with her wonted remedies, and would with her accustomed weapons buckle with Force, not doubting but to conquer her.

Shee said moreover, that Force did now vse those extraordinarie termes of insolencie towards her, not because her power was any whit increased, but by reason of some disorders of hers, shee perceiued the ancient decorum, her wonted maiestie, and the peoples veneration towards her to be greatly diminished.

Reputation hauing vttered these kinde words, went away, and shortly after retired her selfe into her lodging: whence for diuers moneths space shee was neuer seene to come abroad, but with great feneritie gaue her selfe to reforme and correct her selfe, for euer banishing all self-respects and priuate interestes; to which, because shee had yeilded ouermuch, and too openly abandoned her selfe, shee euidently perceiued her honour and credit to be much impaired. And then with the beefom of a rigid reformation in her selfe, she wholly imployd her time in cleansing her house and familie from all manner of filthinesse, pollution, and basenesse; from which she also chased and expelled griping Auarice, daring Ambition, and all other priuate, dishonest, vnlawfull or scandalous passions.

This Princessse hauing thus reformed her priuate disorders, being one morning to be present at some solemne and publike Act, she extraordinarily embellished and adorned her selfe all ouer with honestie of minde, with vprightnesse of spirit, with singlenesse of heart, with vngrudging liberallitie, and with all her other most esteemed vertues. And hauing put on the rich robe of righteousness, and affectionate loue towards all well-deseruing creatures, and of publike  
P  
charitie,

## 106 *The New-found Politicke.*

charitie, she came forth with so awfull a maiestie, and comely a grauitie, where shee was expected by all the other most excellent Vertues, in whom shee stirred vp so great respect, and regardfull veneration, that euen the Lady Force her selfe (so great was the deuotion that possessed her minde) was seene to tremble and stand amazed: and in that occasion, not only with her accustomed reuerence, to grant her her due precedence on the right hand, but with a kinde of seruile submission, to beg, as a singular fauour at her hands, the prerogatiue, in that solemnitie, to carry vp her traine.

---

*The Prouince of Focides by her Ambassadors complaineth vnto Apollo, that his Maiesties officers doe not permit her to enioy her priuiledges: whose request is not only reiected, but they haue a most sharp and vnpleasant answer.*

Rag. 1. 2 Part.

---

**T**He most populous Prouince of *Focides*, which some yeares since rebelled from the Ignorant, and voluntarily did subiect it selfe vnto *Apollo's* Dominion, of whom she obtained so ample priuiledges and large immunities, as it might truly be said, that the *Focenses* liued in a kinde of free libertie, hath now sent her Ambassadors to this Court, to complaine against his Maiesties officers, that they will not permit them to enioy those priuiledges, which by his sacred Maiestie were granted them. And therefore doe instantly require him, to command the due obseruation of them.

This businesse, which somewhat distasted *Apollo*, was by him referred vnto his Royall Councell of State; from whom

whom the Ambassadors two daies since had for a finall answer, that the Lords of the Councell did greatly wender, and rested much scandalized, that the people of *Focides* seemed to be so ignorant of the affaires of the world, as they knew not, that Priuiledges, Liberties, Franchises, Exemptions and Immunities granted vnto people newly conquered, were like vnto those cherries, that were giuen to children when they cryde and puled, to make them hold their peace, but were afterwards taken from them when they lay still and quiet. To whom the chiefe of the Ambassadors stoutly replied, that if in *Parnassus* they vsed so fouly to abuse sillie well-meaning people, *Focides* would ere long fall to whining againe, to the end it might be stilled with cherries of new priuiledges.

To this companion, *Francis Guicciardin*, Lord President of the Royall Counsell suddenly answered, that if the *Focenses* did well consider the present state wherein they were, they should finde, that with the Cittadels, which in times of peace they had suffered to be built vpon their necks, they were reduced vnto such termes of bondage and thraldome, as if they fell to whining againe, they might very well, without any danger or prejudice vnto *Apollo's* state, be stilled and made to hold their peace with smarting lashes and bloody stripes.

---

*Socrates hauing this morning beene found dead in his bed, Apollo vseth all possible diligence, to discover the true occasion of his sudden death.*

Rag. 32. 2 Part.

---

**T**His present morning, great *Socrates*, who yesternight went to bed in perfect good health, hath beene found starke dead in his bed: and forsomuch as his corps



was all swolne and puffed vp, most men doe vehemently suspect, that there hath beene some machination of poyson practised vpon him. And the *Peripateticks* (cruell enemies to the *Socratike* Sect) haue beene much questioned and blamed for it. And so much the more, because it is well knowne to all men, that the most detestable armes of poysoning are very familiar vnto *Aristotle*, Prince of that great Sect.

All *Socrates* his household hath this morning beene imprisoned, from whom no other light or confession can be wrested, but that some daies before, *Socrates* was scene and obserued to be much anguished, grieved, and perplexed, still seeming to feele some griefe of minde; for he was diuers times heard lamentably to exclaime, *Oh corrupted world! Oh depraued age! Oh most-most unhappy mankind!*

*Apollo*, who hath felt an extraordinary sorrow for the losse of so great a Philosopher, hath strictly commanded the body to be opened, to see whether his bowels and entrailes yeelded any signe or likelyhood of poyson, which being done, all his interiors were open, whereby it was evidently perceined, that *Socrates*, by reason of the infinite filthy things, enormous abuses, and scandalous objects, which he was compelled daily to view and behold in this depraued and corrupted Age; and for hauing taken a great windiness of scandals, hee was forced to burst. Most rich and sumptuous haue the funerals beene, that were celebrated for so great a man.

And *Marcus Tullius Cicero* (a most affectionate fauourer of the *Socratike* Sect) with an excellent and elaborated Oration, hauing highly extolled the veritie of the doctrine, with floods of teares bewailed the calamitie and miserable condition of these present daies; in which with rigorous seueritie, all men are strictly forbidden to satyryze.

And honest Gentlemen beholding continually things most worthy to be published by sound of horne and trumpet, are inforced to see, to hold their peace, and to burst.

*Natalis Comes the Historian, for hauing spoke  
some thing in a publike congressc of learned  
men, that grieuously offended Apollo, is by his  
Maiestie seuerely punished.*

Rag. 49. 2 Part.

**W**Hilest some few daies since, *Natalis Comes* a  
Latine Historian, together with diuers other  
learned men of this Court, vnder *Melpomenes*  
Porch (as the custome of Historians is) discoursed of the  
glory of those great Princes, that haue left any eternall me-  
morie of their honourable actions in the world, termed by  
the name of a glorious conquest the vsurpation of a king-  
dome, made by a mightie Prince, without any iustice, right,  
or lawfull pretence.

Which speech being presently reported vnto *Apollo* by  
one of those wicked and make-bate spirits, whereof the  
Aire, and the Earth is euer full: His Maiestie fell into so  
passionate a rage against *Natalis*, as at that very instant he  
caused him to be put in prison, and at once vsed the rigor,  
straitly to forbid him, for the space of three whole yeares,  
the ingresse into any Libraries.

And howbeit *Apollo* haue most importunately beene sol-  
licited by most of the chiefe Historians of this State, to pro-  
ceed with some milder terme of mercy towards so vertuous  
a follower of his, he neuerthelesse hath and doth still refuse  
to doe it.

And saith besides, that there is no greater wickednesse in  
the world, than the impious and trecherous licence, which  
diuers Princes haue vsurped vnto themselues, to rob and  
steale whole States and Kingdoms one from another.

## 110 *The New-found Politicke.*

An action that hath filled the world with those lamentable mischiefs, and deplorable confusions and disorders, that so much afflict mankind. And he thinks it an iniquitie extremely outrageous, that in his vertuous Dominion, there should be found any one learned man so perfidious, as durst dare to stile those trecherous thefts, and vnlawfull robberies, which are committed with a million of aggravating and impious circumstances, by the title of glorious conquests.

---

THE

---





# THE NEW-FOWN D POLITCKE.

---

## THE SECOND PART.

---

### CHAP. I.

*Maximilian the Emperour is aduertised of  
the trouble begun among his Sonnes.*



Here came three Posts very lately vnto the Maiestie of the Emperour *Maximilian* the second; and presently it was knowne how they brought him aduertisement, that the Arch-duke *Matthias* had taken Armes against the Emperour *Rodolphus* his brother, seditiously requiring the Kingdomes of *Hungary* and *Bohemia*, and the absolute Dominion of *Austria*, and other Prouinces. These ill newes infinitely troubled the minde of the Emperour, for he well knew, that the discord risen vp among his Sonnes, would giue the enemies of the house of *Austria* that content, which they so much desired. Whereupon, yesterday morning very early, that Prince presented himselfe before *Apollo*, and with many  
teares

## 112 *The New-found Politicke.*

reares demaunded of him, when the euils of the House of *Austria*, so long before commenced, through the cruell combination of all *Germany* against it, should haue an end; and for what demerit such fearefull scourges were sent vnto his house. Vnto this demaund *Apollo* answered in this sort: All the troubles and persecutions of your Family, great Emperour, shall cease, when it shall wholly abandon those ambitious thoughts of desiring to command ouer *Hungary*, and *Transiluania*; which hath giuen vnto *Germany* such ieaousies, that to secure her ancient liberty from the power of your house, she bendeth all her study to nothing more, then to the depression of it: for the *Germans*, fearing greater prejudice from your acquests, then from the victories of the *Turkes*, are fully resolu'd rather to lose *Vienna*, then recouer *Buda*. And then also shalt all *Germany* vnfaignedly loue your Archdukes, when deposing their present ambition, they shall make it appeare, that they desire to be equall, and not superiour to other Princes of *Germany*.

### CHAP. 2.

*Most of the Princes, Common-weales, and States of Europe, are weighed in a payre of Scales, by Lorenzo Medici.*

**S**eeing it is apparent, that the *Roman Common-weale*, after the acquisition it had made of the Empire of all *Italy*, could in a short time arriue to that *Vniuersall Monarchy*, which is yet so famous to the world, and whereunto many ambitious Princes haue since in vaine aspired, it hath beene a generall receiued opinion, That that Potentate, who in State and Forces is suffered to grow vnto such greatnesse, that he findeth no other Prince able to counterpoyze him, no more then the *Roman Commonweale* did, after it became Commander ouer *Italy*, cannot possibly bee impeached

impeached from obtrayning the *Vniuersall Monarchy*. Whereupon those Empires and Kingdomes, which were afterwards framed out of the pieces of the *Roman Monarchy*, to auoyd those calamities and dissolutions, which fell vpon such Potentates as were oppressed by the *Roman Forces*, out of most wholesome, and almost diuine counsell-agreed together, that every fifteenth yeare, all the Princes of *Europe* should assemble into one place; where each ones Forces should be seuerally weighed; and thereupon fit counterpoize, and due mortification be given vnto him, that was found to be growen to any greatnesse, which might be odious and dangerous to his Competitor.

Many great Wits were from time to time preferred to that honourable charge of governing the Scales; but for an hundredth yeres past or thereabout, they were managed by the Illustrious House of *Medici*, and in particular by *Lorenzo the Great*. Which prerogatiue, although to many it seemed preiudiciall vnto the Maiestie of the Popes, and prudence of the *Venetian Senate*, who haue alwaies warched; if not more, at least-wise equally with *Lorenzo*, and the *Florentine Common-weale*, to maintaine both in *Italy* and abroad, the Forces of the Potentates of *Europe* even ballanced, yet with a maruellous consent of all the Historians the gouernment of the Scales was given into the hands of Signior *Lorenzo*. The first day of *August*, then all the Princes and Potentates of *Europe*, assembled in *Phocia*, not onely to meet with so important a businesse as the perfect knowledge of their owne affaires, but that also of others, which in matter of State importeth much more. Whereupon by an ancient and iust prerogatiue, the first that came to be weighed, was the *Aristocraticall Monarchy* of the *Apollonike Sea*, whose temporall State was put into the Scale; and because the weight of the last fifteenth yeere was but sixe Millions of pounds, and now was found to amount vnto seuen and an halfe, euery one knew, that the addition of the noble Duchy of *Ferrara* had caused that increase. The next that was put into the Scale, was the State of the seven Princes *Electors* of the *Re-*



*man* Empire, which by old Records appeareth to haue weighed in times past seuentie Millions of pounds; but since, by the indiscreet gouernment and courses of many Emperours, that lusty complexion, which made it euermore redoubted, was so spoyled, that it fell into those dangerous and soule infirmities, which after a long Quartane, found end in an Heeticke Feuer, that hath now so consumed it, as our age beholdeth it left with nothing but very skinn and bone. Howbeit, though it be so much decreased in State, yet the great bulke it hath of body, maketh it in shew very goodly to look vpon; the rather, because the intrinsecall imperfections are not discovered: for many good persons with the ancient Titles of the Empire, and Maiestickall name of *Cesar*, haue beautified it very excellently without, but when it came to be weighed, it was found quite empty within; a feather not being so light, as the name of a Prince without authority is vaine: whence it is that the *Roman Empire* proued so weake, as it weighed but 480 pounds. Then the famous Peeres of *France* brought ynto the Scale the flourishing and warlike *French Monarchy*; a Square of five hundred and fifty miles euery way, replenished with an infinite Nobleise, armed on horsebacke, which not onely maintaineth peace at home, but maketh so great a King formidable to all the Nations of the earth; besides a world of learned men which adorne it; Merchandise and Trades which enrich it; Tillage and Husbandry, which make it plentifull, and abounding with euery good thing. The ancient weight of so famous a *Monarchy* was twenty Millions of pounds; but in the last fifteenth yeeres weight, by reason of the horrible calamities, whereinto (by the disloyalty of some other Barons) she was thrown, it did not arrive to twelue Millions; howbeit, now it not onely equalled, but went farre beyond the weight of the best ancient times; for it came to five and twenty Millions; a matter of such maruel to euery one, that the *Spaniards* got on their Spectacles, and very narrowly obserued, whether the Weights were right or no.

To the ancient Kingdome of *France*, was added the acquisition

## The second Part. 115

quisition of *Bresse* giuen vp by the Duke of *Sauoy*, which in regard it was so aduantageous to the City of *Lyons*, augmented the weight of it about a Million. Next were the many Kingdomes of *Spaine* put into the Scale by the *Spanish Grandes*, and to the great wonder of those ancient men, that could remember, how an hundred and twenty yeares since, they were held in a poore and vile account; the weight amounted to twenty Millions. The *Spaniards* remained exceeding well satisfied with this weight of their *Spaine*: and assured themselves, that with the addition of so many other States, they had besides to put into the Scale, not onely to equall, but farre to exceed the five and twenty Millions of the *French Monarchy*. Wherefore instantly they put into the Scale the flourishing Kingdome of *Naples*, which euery one thinking would increase the weight at least 2 Millions more, it appeareth, that then it weighed lesse by one and an halfe: at this strange accident the *Spaniards* being much amazed, said, That either *Lorenzo* had vsed some fraud in the weighing, or that of necessity the Scales were not euen; because it was a monstrous thing, that the addition of matter should abate of the weight. Whereunto *Lorenzo* coldly answered; That his Scales were euen, but that neither the *Indiæ* void of Inhabitants, nor the *Neopolitans*; & *Milanese*, which were so farre distant from the Forces of *Spaine*, and replenished with a people, which so vnwillingly supported the command of strangers, weighed any thing at all: for it was the loue and multitude of subiects, the fertility and vnion of States, that giue weight, and turne the Scale.

Hereupon the *Spaniards* added the Duchy of *Milan* into the scale, which in like manner abated a million of the weight; whereat also the *Spaniards* were so much astonied, that they would not put *Flanders* into the Scale, fearing to receiue a greater distaste and affront. Howbeit some said, that if they had put in the *Indiæ*, they might haue wrought some good effect, but not those miracles which certaine lauish tongues haue deliuered; who with the same facility talke of millions of Crownes that the Furnace men make of

## 116 *The New-found Politicke.*

very brickeandstyle. Then came the *English* Lords, who put into the Scale their Kingdome, so much redoubted for the strength of the wonderfull situation thereof; for the continued mountaines which compasse it about, serving for walls, made by the very powerfull hand of God in forme of bulwarks, and the Ocean for most profound Ditches, make it a Kingdome feared, in regard of the commodity it hath to aslaile others; and the insuperable difficulties which they shall finde that offer to attempt it. The weight of this Kingdome was answerable to that of the last fifteenth yeare which amoured to sixteene Millions. But the *English*, to giue more weight to their Kingdome, would haue put the Kingdom of *Scotland* into the Scale, when the *Scottish* Nobility with drawne swords in their hands opposed themselves; freely protesting, that they would neuer suffer their countrey to be annexed to the kingdom of the *English*; for yet fresh was the lamentable example of the miseries of *Flanders*, who when she saw her Earls become Kings of *Spain*, foolishly beleued that she should command ouer the *Spaniards*; whereas soone after, not *Spain* was sacked by the *Flemmings*, but *Flanders* by the couetous and cruell *Spaniards*; and that which made vp their misery, *Charles* the fifth, the Emperour, and King *Philip* his Son, by their continuall residence in *Spaine*, of *Flemmings* became *Spaniards*. The vnfortunate *Flemmings* by loosing their Prince, of naturall subiects, grew to bee esteemed strangers, and men of little faith. And so *Flanders*, the naturall Countrey of *Charles* the fifth, the Patrimony of King *Philip*, became (according to the termes of modern policy) a State of five States, and began to bee gouerned by Strangers; with those iealousies, and with those oppressions of customes, taxes, contributions, and donatiues, as begat those bad humours, those ill satisfactions, from whence since hath proceeded that ciuill warre, which after an vnspeakable profusion of gold, an infinite effusion of blood, an incredible losse of honour to the *Flemmings*, was conuered into a couetous merchandise of the *Spaniards*. Therefore the *Scots* by such lamentable miseries haue learned, not to permit



mit their King, vpon any termes whatsoeuer, to abandon the royall Sear of his ancient kingdome, for to place it in a greater, newly fallen vnto him: in which case the *Scots* should vnder their cruell enemies the *English*, be sure to suffer all the calamities, which inferiour Nations are wont to endure at the hands of the superiour.

Some that were present at this Act, report, how the *Spaniards* told the King of *England*, that those *Scots* which had spoken so arrogantly in the presence of his Maiesty, were to be seuerely chastised; to whom the King of *England* answered, That the *Spaniards* ought not to giue that counsell vnto others, which had proued so pernicious to themselues: and thereupon hauing commanded the stay of weighing their Kingdome, he assured his *Scots*, that ere long he would giue them all possible satisfaction.

After this, the vast *Ottoman* Empire was put into the Scale; which the last fifteenth yeare arriued to the summe of two and thirty Millions, but now was found to bee lesse than sixteene; the strangenesse whereof made all the Princes very much to maruell; and particularly the *Venetians*, who could not belecue such a fall; whereupon they desired, that with more diligence it might be reweighed, and it appeared, how in that little time running betweene the first and this second weighing, it had fallen eight hundred twenty and two pounds: whereby it was manifest, that the *Ottoman* Empire, heretofore so terrible to the world, now consumed with luxury, couetousnesse, and idlenesse, runneth headlong to his ruine, which gaue great contentment to all those Princes. Neuerthelesse it was obserued by some of the wisest there present, that the *Spaniards* were not so glad of it as the rest; out of a doubt they had, that the depression of the *Turke*, would bee the exaltation of the *Venetian* State. Then came the *Polack* Senators, and put into the Scale their Kingdome, which in regard of the small authority the King hath there, & the too much command, which the *Palatines* arrogate vnto themselues, made but a poore reckoning, for it did not amount to six millions of pounds,

whereas in times past it alwaies exceeded twelue. After them the Signory of the Councell of *Tenn* put into the Scale the flourishing Estate of the *Venetian* Common-wealth, most admirable for the greatnesse thereof, and opportunity of situation fitting for all great enterprises, which went beyond all expectation in the weight, for it came to eight Millions; the cause whereof was said to bee the huge masse of Gold, which those wise *Senators* in so long a time of peace had gathered together into their Treasury. Next came the *Switzers*, the *Grisons*, and other free people of *Germany*, and brought their Common-weals to the Scale. Howbeit the Princes required, that they might be weighed each one seuerally by it selfe, wherewith the *Germanes* were well contented, so that it might be done. But *Lorenzo* hauing put the Common-wealth of *Basil* into the Scale, it appeared, that the greater part of the other Common-weales of *Germany* were all so linked together, that it was impossible to separate them one from another, which put a many of ambitious Princes therein a sweat. Then the Duke of *Sauoy* caused his State to be put into the Scale by his noble Knights of the *Annonciata*, which equalled the weight of the last fifteenth yeere; but *Lorenzo* hauing added into the Scale that most noble prerogative of Title, which the said Duke *Charles Emannell* enioyeth of the prime Souldier of *Italy*, it was seene to aggrauate the weight a Million foure hundreth and twenty pounds. After this, with a pompe and Maiefty matchable to Kings, appeared the Duke of *Lorraine*; whose State, though little, equalled the weight of great Kingdoms; and it was considered that it fell out to bee so by a certaine good fortune which that Prince had, to haue his States so happily seated, that hee could easily put the *Low-Countries* into grieuous difficulties, by impeaching the passage of those succours which the *Spaniards* conduct thither out of *Italy*, whereby he hath growne into such reputation, that to the most offerer he selleth for ready gold the merchandise of that his adhering: in such sort, that after he had dreyned the *Spaniards*, asmuch as any the deuoutest *French* Lord of the

the holy League whatsoeuer, siding afterwards with the *French*, hee knew so well how to change his coppy, that a King of *France*, such as was *Henry* the fourth, the great Duke of *Toscan*, and the Duke of *Mantona* were glad of his alliance. And fully to make vp the *Spaniards* ieaiousie, the famous *Venetian* Common-wealth drew into her pay a Prince of that House with such affection, that if that great Lady had not made a vow of perpetuall chastity, and her nature (according to the custome of some *Indians*) had not beene stitched vp the first day she was born by the *Venetian Signory*, most ieaious of her honour, it was verily beleueed by many, that she would haue taken him to husband. It was obserued, that the Duke of *Sauoy* enuied much the felicity of this Prince, because hee finding himselfe also seated betweene the *French* and the *Spaniards* of *Milan*, as the Duke of *Lorraine* was betweene the *French* and the *Spaniards* of *Flanders*, in stead of so many benefits, and so many commodities as fell vpon the Duke of *Lorraine*, hee had receiued most cruell kicks, not onely from the *French*, then his enemies, but from the *Spaniards* his friends, so that it was euident, the Duke of *Sauoy* did now plainly see, how that practise of his with the *Spaniard* was most pernicious for him. Then came the *Otto di Balia*, and put into the scale the flourishing State of the great Dukes of *Toscan*, which by reason of the excellent wits of the Inhabitants, perpetuall plenty, continuall peace, and quiet security it enioyeth, answered in weight to many Kingdomes. *Lorenzo* greatly reioyced, when he saw how vpon the foundations of those Churches and Hospitals, which he and his Predecessors in the time of the *Florentine* liberty had laid in their Countrey, their Successors, according to the modell left them by *Cosimo* the Great, had afterwards found meanes to erect strong Cittadels; whereupon *Lorenzo*, to make a glorious shew of the worth and wisdom of the Princes of his house, added into the Scale the admirable vnderstanding of *Ferdinand* the Great, with the excessive weight whereof it was so ouercharged, that the huge chayne whereby it hung brake in two, so that



that all went to ground. This accident of the Scales so broken, was an hindrance that other *Italian* Princes which remained could not be weighed; whereupon it was concluded, that comming according to the ancient custome, to lay all the Princes and Potentates of *Italy* in ballance against the Monarchy of *Spaine*, out of the vniuersall weight of the *Italian* Princes, each ones particular would easily appeare. Into the midst of the great Hall then was brought an huge and euen paire of Balance, wherinto on the one part was put all the Kingdomes of the Monarchy of *Spaine*, and into the other all the Principalities of *Italy*, and it was seene that they stood in equall ballance; a matter of great trouble to all the *Italian* Princes: but whilest they continued in this agony, it was noted how the mighty *French* Monarchy, with one onely louing looke which thee gaue to that Ballance, wherein the *Italian* Principalities lay, made it suddenly to turne on that side. It may not be omitted, how the *Spaniards* seeing the Dukes of *Sauoy*, who the last fifteenth yeare refused to be weighed with the *Italian* Forces, now to be put into the Ballance, for to counterpoise theirs, threatened them by biting their thumbs at them; whereof those Princes being aware, with a generosity worthy their vndaunted spirits, they say thus vnto them; Signory of *Spain*, yee can no longer feed men with hopes, for now we are thoroughly possessed of your cources: ye thought to haue brought the Dukes of *Sauoy*, by the cunning of your hopes, to such a machine, as to forge that little bread, which they had in the mouth of their state; to reach at the shadow of those great inheritances of *Spaine*, which they saw in the botrome in the water. And because the *Spaniards* complained for that the Dukes of *Parma*, *Modena*, *Urbino*, the Lords of *Mirandola*, and the famous *Roman* Barons, *Gartani*, *Colonesi*, and *Orsini*, which haue the *Flece*, and are in their pay, were weighed with the *Italian* Forces; whereas in regard of that Order, and the Pensions they receiue, they were obliged to adhere to their designs, and to be the ministers of their greediness. They were answered by those Lords, that they received the honours of the

the Fleece, and inioyed the profits of those Pensions, as honourable Ladies accept of gifts from their Louers; only in a pure way of curtesie, and not with an intent any way to forget what appertaineth to their honour.

CHAP. 4.

*Almansor, sometime King of the Moores, encountering with the Kingdome of Naples, they relate one to another the miseries they sustaine by the oppression of the Spaniards.*

**T**He famous King of *Moores*, *Almansor*, he that many yeares together raigned in *Spaine* ouer the noble Realme of *Granada*, met yesterday with the Kingdome of *Naples*, and falling in talke with him, after hee had for a good space obserued the chaine, which the said Kingdome of *Naples* wore fastned about his legge, he told him, that the manufacture thereof being *Moresco*, he verily thought that he had many times scene, and handled it somewhere else; and a little while after with a shew of great maruell he affirmed, that he knew it well; and how it was the very same, wherewithall both he, and the *Moorish* Kings his Predecessors had for the space of seuen hundreth yeares held many Kings of *Spaine* in seruitude; and therefore he earnestly intreated him, to let him vnderstand, how, by whom, and when he was chained in that manner. A very good eye, and an excellent memory hast thou, *Almansor*, (answered then the Kingdome of *Naples*) for this vnluckie chaine, which thou seest about my legge, was brought out of *Spaine* by *Gonsaluo Cordoba*, called the great Captaine, and therefore it is very likely to be the same thou speakest of. And now it is an hundreth yeares, since

first I found my selfe in the miserable seruitude, wherein thou beholdest me, and from which I know not whether euer I shall be freed; for in regard of the mighty power, whereunto I see the forces of the *Spaniards* arriued, hauing vterly lost all hope of assistance, that may be expected from men, I know that my ancient liberty standeth wholly in the powerfull hand of God, who had need to reneue in me the miracles of the Red Sea, if my deliuerance shall follow. The yeares (replied *Almansor*) confront well; for a little before the time of thy seruitude, the *Spaniards* vndid this my chaine from about the leg of the Kingdome of *Granada*, wherewithall afterwards they bound thee. But let it not displease thee, O Kingdome of *Naples*, to declare vnto me, how it could come to passe, that the *Spaniards* should make themselues Masters of such a Kingdome as thou art, so potent, and so far distant from their Forces. By fraud *Almansor*, (said the *Neapolitan* Kingdome) did the *Spaniards* get into *Italy*, for by open force they had neuer beene able to make such notable acquests; and as thou saidst well, so disproportionable to their Forces, which were so far off. But heare, and wonder at the large and grosse conscience of a King of *Spaine* in matters of State, although he vsed much Art to seeme vnto foolish men a very Saint; for thou shalt come vnto the knowledge of a Tragedy, according to the rules of my Christian Religion, most wicked and cruell; but according to the termes of moderne Policie, the most aduised that euer any Nation represented vpon the stage of the world. *Alfonso* my King, to his vtter, and my chiefeft ruine, gaue *Isabella* his Neece (for from this vnhappy mariage did my displantation take beginning) to *John Galeazzo*, Duke of *Milan* for wife. The minoritie first, and then the vnspeakable silly weaknesse of so infortunate a Prince encouraged *Lodouico Sforza* to vsurpe the State vpon his Nephew; *Alfonso*, as it behoued him, sought to hinder that Tyrannie; whereof *Lodouico* being aware, and knowing, that without the ruine of my Kings, it was not possible for him to arriue vnto the end of his most iniust desire, hee  
fell



fell into that resolution, which afterwar ds both to himselfe, to me, and to all the Princes of *Italy*, proued so fatall, of drawing the *French* into *Italy*, to the conquest of me. My Kings to defend themselues from such mighty enemies, called to their aide that holy soule of *Ferdinand* King of *Aragon* their Cousin, who shewed himselfe so kinde a kinsman, and such a faithfull friend, that instead of chasing away the *French* enemies, he diuided me with them; and to shew himselfe compleat, a little after this vnhappy diuision, hee entred into warres against the *French*, and hauing ouercome them, he forced them to returne full of shame, and losse into their country; whereupon the good King *Ferdinand* without any scruple at all of conscience became my absolute Lord; and then it was, that he fastned this chaine about my legge, which thou remembrest to be the manufacture, and worke of thy Nation. And I doe not thinke, that in all the Chronicles of the *Saracens*, *Moores*, or *Turks*, which it is likely thou hast read, there was euer a more wicked trechery recorded, done by a King, that desired to be reputed a man of a good conscience, and of an holy disposition; and that a little before had receiued of the Apostolike Sea that glorious title of the most *Catholike King*. Truly (replied *Almansor*) in the Chronicles, which thou hast named of my Nation, many foule actions committed by diuers Princes out of ambition to raigne, may be read, but this which thou hast recounted of *Ferdinand* goeth beyond them all. But if thou, O *Almansor*, (said the Kingdome of *Naples*) diddest with thy Nation keepe the Kingdome of *Granada*, chained so many hundreth yeares, what course tooke the *Spaniards* for to free him? That Vnion of the Kingdomes of *Castile* and *Aragon* (replied *Almansor*) which followed vpon the mariage betweene *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, occasioned the liberty of the Kingdome of *Granada*: a most vnhappy Vnion, the which, no lesse than I haue done, and continually still doe, the greatest Potentates of *Europe* haue lamented, doe lament, and perpetually with vnfained teares will lament; as that which is the true and onely root, from

## 124 *The New-found Politicke.*

whence are sprung all those greatest subuersions of States, which vnto this day haue beene scene in many parts of *Europe*, but more remarkably in *Italy*. And beleeue me, *Neapolitan* Kingdome, that euen till now might I haue raigned happily in *Spaine*, if this pestiferous Vnion had not ouerthrowne my greatnesse; for the many ieaiousies that raigned betweene the *Castilians* and *Aragonians*, were my inexpugnable Cittadels, which would haue maintained my raigne here for euer. Withall assure thy selfe, O Kingdome of *Naples*, that the aids which the Popes gaue to *Ferdinand*, and *Queene Isabella*, greatly accelerated my taking in. Peace, peace, *Almansor* (said then the *Neapolitan* Kingdom) for after thou wert chased out of *Spaine* by the ambitious *Spanish* Nation, the Popes vnderwent such miseries, that it may be truly said, how with ready money they bought those extreme calamities, wherewithall afterwards they encountered; for though the Sea Apostolicall were well contented to see the *Moors* driuen out of *Spaine*, yet that satisfaction was much distasted with my seruitude, which followed presently vpon it, the Popes hauing neuer had any thing in greater feare, than that I should fall into the hands of a mighty Prince, who might make them liue in those perpetuall ieaiousies, wherein finding themselues drowned euen vp to the very eyes, many of them, and particularly those, that haue a greater knowledge of things of the world, doe not alwaies make quiet sleeps. A cleare testimonie of the truth which I speake, was the lamentable and wicked sacke of *Rome*, perpetrated by the *Spaniards* a little after my seruitude; with which ingratitude they paid the Apostolike Sea for all they were debtors vnto it, as well for the remission of the Tribute of *Naples*, as for the other succors, which they receiued in the warre of *Granada*. A calamitie, that hauing past the termes of most grieuous miseries, hath in such manner opened the eyes euen of men of the drowsiest vnderstanding, that euery one commeth clearly to know, what it is to vnchaine the Lion out of a zeale of pietie; for the *Spaniards* no sooner saw themselves freed from the impediment

ment of the *Moores* of *Granada*, but that through the ambition, which they shewed in desiring to command ouer the whole Vniuerse, not onely in *Italie*, but throughout all *Europe*, most important ieaoulies of State, and most grieuous interests of Religion discovered themselves, insomuch, that I haue often heard it discoursed by men of most vnderstanding in affaires of the world, how peraduenture it would haue beene lesse preiudiciall for many Princes of *Europe*, that thou hadst raigned still in *Granada*, than that the *Spaniards* should haue passed into *Italy*, to acquire such important States, as at this day they possesse there.

Hereunto may be added the preiudices both publike and priuate, which my ruine hath brought, and continually doth bring vnto the *Italian* Princes, and more particularly to the Popes, because the Kings of *Spaine* had no sooner fastened this chaine about my leg, but presently they began to aspire vnto the dominion of all *Italy*; and the quicklier to arriue thereunto, they knew very excellently how to interresse themselves in the differences, which at that time depended betweene the Princes of *Italy* and the *French*, about the possession of the Dutchy of *Milan*, wherein that top of man, *Charles* the fifth caried himselfe in such sort, that hee made himselfe to bee knowne the worthy Nephew of his Grandfather by the Mothers side: for hauing with the forces of the *Italian* Princes, chased the *French* out of *Italy*, in stead of restoring the *Sforzi* to the State, as it was agreed betwixt him, and the confederate Princes, with the fraud of a thousand Turkish quarrels pickt of purpose, which he well knew how to inuent against the *Sforzi*, he made himselfe absolute Master of that so important a Dutchie. Stay, Kingdome of *Naples*; and making a point here, (said *Almansor*) satisfie me in this: Seeing the noble State of *Milan* was fallen into the hands of the *Spaniards*, what hindred them from running precipitously to the acquisition of all *Italie*? and seeing thy seruitude doth manifest vnto the world, that the aids and succours of Princes, serue more for the benefit of him that giueth them, than for the pro-



## 126 *The New-found Politicke.*

fit of him that receiue them, why would not the *Italian* Princes rather suffer, that *Milan* should bee vnder the Dominion of the *French*, than by receiuing aide from the *Spaniards*, runne the danger of letting that Dutchy (being so important a member of *Italy*) fall into the hands, as thou saidst it did, of the Kings of *Spaine*? The power of the Kings of *France* (answered the *Neapolitan* Kingdome) defendeth that remnant of Liberty which remaineth in *Italy*, from the ambition of *Spaine*: for those glorious Kings out of the interest of their greatnesse will not endure, that the Dominion of all *Italy* should fall into the power of the ambitious *Spanish* Nation, which cannot extinguish the ardent thirst they haue of commanding, neither with the Conquest of all the new World discovered by them, nor with so great a part which they possesse in the old.

Besides, the *Italian* Princes, who know the great perill (wherein they finde they are) of a dangerous and miserable servitude, haue so vnited themselues together, that although they be many in number, yet make they but one Body; and the *Spaniards*, who haue vsed, and doe vse all possible deuices to disunite them, euidently perceiue, that they wash a Black-Moore.

But touching the State of *Milan*, thou must know, how it was iudged more secure for the publike Liberty of *Italia*, that that Dutchie should fall into the power of the *Spaniards*, than that it should remaine in the hands of the *French*; who for that they were ioyning to *Italie*, when therein they should possesse any little part, there would haue beene manifest danger, that they would haue made themselues absolute Lords of the whole: but in the *Spaniards* it would fall out cleane contrary; for their Forces, albeit very great, are notwithstanding so far off, that by so long a tract of Sea, they could with much difficultie transport out of *Spaine* into *Italian* Forces, that were able to maintaine the acquests they had made, not that they could be sufficient to subdue the whole.

Thou speakest the truth, (said then *Almanzor*) but goe on, and declare vnto me the prejudices, which thy falling into the

the hands of the *Spaniards* brought vnto the Popes. Know then, (replied the Kingdome of *Naples*) that whereas before, the Popes were the terror of my Kings, now it happeneth to be cleane otherwise; for they liue in a very great agony, lest the Vnion of *Milan* with *Naples* should one day follow; to which marke, they obserue, the *Spaniards* haue directed the scope of all their thought; whereupon the *Spaniards*, whose proper nature it is to make good vse of the feare, whereinto they see they haue put the Princes their neighbours, haue arrogated vnto theselues such authority in the Court of *Rome*, that they vaunt they are the true arbitratours of all the most important matters which there are handled. Moreouer, when the Kings of *Naples* were not Kings of *Spaine*, the Popes with euery little menace of denying the inuestiture, obtained of my Kings, Principalities, Duchies, Earledomes, and other great States in gift, buying their friendships also with marriages, and many other sorts of liberalitie; but now the feare being ceased, if the Popes will make their kinred great with titles of important States, they must be glad to buy them with their ready money, and the aduised Kings of *Spaine*, besides the precious Gold of intreaties, which at any hand they will bee sure shall precede for a first payment, sell them vnto them thoroughly sawced. Important interests, and grievous disorders are these (saide *Almansor*) which thou hast recounted vnto me; but how commerh it that thou, Kingdome of *Naples*, which art the Magazine of Silkes, the Granary of *Italy*, shouldest goe so ragged, and be so leane? Seeing the *Spaniards*, that come naked out of *Spaine* [ answered the Kingdome of *Naples* ] after they haue been three or foure dayes in my house, will needs couer themselves all ouer with gold, it is no maruell if I be spoyled, to clothe so many Raggedemuffins: besides, if thou sawest the rapacitie of the Vice-royes, that to recouer themselves are sent vnto me, or if thou knewest the rapines of Secretaries, of thousand Officers, and other Courtiers, which they bring along with them, all thirsty of my bloud, thou wouldest greatly maruell, how it were possible, I should satiate the raging

ging and greedy swallow of so many hunger-starved wretches. As for the little flesh thou seest on my backe, the *Spaniards* affirme, that in the booke of a certaine *Florentine*, who hath giuen rules of the cruell moderne Policie, they find written, that being a Kindome conquered, after the manner of those horses which are kept onely for races, I ought to bee maintained low in the flesh.

I but (said *Almonzor* then) the *Milanese* how are they intreated? They also (replyed the Kingdomes of *Naples*) are bathed with the water, wherewithall thou seest me so wet, onely this difference is betwixt vs, that in *Milan* are drops, in my house, floods. The true occasion of the diuersitie of these intreatings is the quality of the *Lombards* dispositions, most vnlike to my *Neapolitans*: for the Nobilitie of the State of *Milan* are naturally phantastically, free, resolute, and farre from that Vice so proper to my *Neapolitans*, of flattery, and affectation; but so bold and hardy, that they dare say, how if one onely *Cremonese* spirit had beene found amongst my *Neapolitan* Barons, it would haue hindred that same forced donatiue, that hath brought me to eat bread and onyons; the which, although with great words, it hath bin often demanded by the *Spaniards* in *Milan*, they haue been as resolutely answered, that they should take care to liue: Besides, the confining of the *Grisons*, of the Duke of *Sauoy*, and *Venetians*, are the cause, that the Kings of *Spaine* proceed with more discretion in *Milan*: for when the Popes managed Armes, I my selfe also was for their occasion greatly respected. But soft, *Almanzor*, yonder commeth my most capitall enemy *Don Pedro de Toledo*, wherefore I pray thee withdraw a little; for at any hand I would not haue him take notice, that I lament my disgraces heere with thee; and for this onely, were it for nothing else, may I rearme my seruitude most wretched, in that I am forced to call this miserable State, wherein thou seest me, the happy golden Age.



CHAP. 5.

Sigismund Battor learneth the Latine tongue.

**Y** Esterday about eight of the clocke in the Euening, the ordinary post of *Germany* arriued at this Court, and brought very ioyfull newes how *Sigismund Battor*, Prince of *Transilvania*, was growne so inamored of the gracefull Latine tongue, that to his great glory he spake, and wrote with the purity and eloquence of the *Cæsarean* style; whereupon all the *Vertuous* earnestly besought *Apollo*, that for such good newes there might be made in *Parnassus* all those demonstrations of ioy, w<sup>ch</sup> (to incourage Great men to the loue of Learning) were wont to be made, when any Prince became learned: But his Maiestie, that seeth into the vttermost secret of all things, denied those *Vertuous* their request, and told them that then onely there should be feasting in *Parnassus*, when out of the freeness of a noble minde, and meere election of studies, not constrained by any necessitie, Princes applyed themselues to Learning; and that they were to know, how Prince *Battor* had gotten the elegant Latine tongue, neither out of ambition to shew himselfe to be learned, nor out of a vertuous curiosity to know many things, but onely out of necessitie for his reputations sake, to correct the foolish and childish absurditie which he committed, in Gender, Number, and Case, at such time, as in the warre of *Hungary*, he took that satall resolution to arme himselfe against the *Turke*, for to adhere vnto the Emperour of *Germany*, whom in regard of the strong and liuely pretensions, which he hath to the Principality of *Transilvania*, hee was to haue in more horreur, then seuentie *Ottoman* Emperours.

## CHAP. 6.

*The Cardinall of Toledoes Summa is not admitted into the Library of Parnassus.*

**T**HE Illustrious and Reuerend *Francesco Cordova*, Cardinall of *Toledo*, a personage of exemplarie life, an exquisite Diuine, and excellent Philosopher; hee that in his owne person honoured the Word of God in the pulpit, more then any other Preacher whatsoeuer of his time, some few dayes since arriued at *Parnassus*, hauing been receiued vpon the confines of the State, by *Alessandro d' Ales*, and *Cornelio Musso* Bishop of *Bitonto*, and all the way entertained at his Majesties charge. This honourable learned man presented his Writings vnto the venerable Colledge of the *Vertuous*; and those of Philosophy were not onely commended, but admired, as also the Commentaries composed by him vpon the Diuine passages of all the sacred Writers, were receiued with extraordinary applause, and shortly after they were carried in a pretious Urne vnder a cloath of Estate, into the *Delphicke* Library, and with the name of the Author, consecrated to Eternitie. Onely his *Summa*, although very learned, was not receiued by those *Vertuous*, who freely told him, that there were so many Workes already of that kind in his Majesties Library, as some of them seemed superfluous: for an infinite many of great Diuines had with such diligence handled matters appertaining to the consciences of priuate men, that they had put the saluation of soules into comprimit, for the onely regard of a shillings gaine: And that the world very much desired to see a complete *Summa*, composed vpon the consciences of great Princes; a matter most necessary for the quiet of the whole Vniuerse, and

and altogether omitted by Diuines ; wherein those actions of Princes should be exactly discoursed vpon , with which so often they put the world into confusion , filling it with robberies, assassinations, and such slaughters of men , that many of them blinded with ambition to raigne vpon earth , haue made riuers to runne with humane blood.

The Colledge of the Learned, hearing these particulars, said, That they much desired to haue these questions disputed and resolued : Namely, whether Christian pietie will admit the speciall *hypothesis*, which the violence of the sword hath vsurped ouer others States : Whether a Principallitie, that by Armes and fraud , is forcibly taken from another Prince, may be held by one that hath the true feare of God : Whether that course of ruling a Kingdome , which is conquered onely to the end to impouerish and waste it, that so it may be gouerned without ieaousie, may be practised by one that is borne in the Christian Faith : Whether the exalting of *Reason of State* to such an height, that it should trample vnder feet, as at this present it doth, all Lawes diuine and humane, be not a more detestable and execrable Idolatry, then worshipping *Nabuchadnezzars* Image, or the golden Calfe. And lastly, the Colledge said, That then their desires would be fully accomplished, when there could be found a Diuine so much fearing God, that with his Writings durst fright Princes as much from doing euill, as many others with their great Volumes had terrified priuate men ; for it seemed a strange thing vnto them, that infinite learned Diuines had so laboured to reason of the strict account, which Shop-keepers are to render, euen for idle words , vnto the Majestie of God, and in the meane time had omitted to make mention of those exorbitant errors, committed by great Princes ; when with their Armies ouer-running States, they send all things into perdition, both sacred and prophane : And that with more benefit to mankind, and eternall reward to themselves, Diuines might haue discoursed vpon the actions of *Lewis* the twelfth, and *Francis* the first, both Kings of *France* ; of *Ferdinand* King of *Aragon*, and *Charles* the fifth the



## 132 *The New-found Politicke.*

the Emperor, whose soules departed out of this world with the heauy burchen of halfe a million of man-slaughters, all committed by their ambition to reigne, and whereof they were to giue a strict account to Almighty God: all which were matters exceeding necessarie, to the end, that mankind so much afflicted by the ambition of Princes, might one day receiue the consolation, which with such longing it desireth, when those that reigne should be terrified from doing amisse, and be made to know, that Hell was prepared as well for the great as the small.

---

### C H A P. 7.

*The Monarchy of Spaine throweth her Physitian out of the window.*

---

**T**HIS Morning the Monarchy of *Spaine* hauing sent for her ordinary Physitian, a little after with her own hands she threw him out of the window of her royall Palace, whereupon the poore wretch, being all battered in peeces, died incontinently. An accident that seemed the more strange, in regard the Physitian was held by all the Court, to be a man of extraordinary honesty, and in the practise of his profession most admirable. Sundry were the discourses that were made vpon so remarkable a matter. But, *Apollo* desiring to know of the *Spanissh Monarchy* herselfe, the true cause of so grievous a resentment, that mighty Queene told him, how aboue forty yeares since, vpon occasion of some accidents that befell her, and other signes which shee had discovered, shee feared that in procelle of time, shee should catch some dangerous *French* disease from the Royall house of *Burbon*, and therefore to provide for

for the inconuenience which sheeforefaw, shee had demanded counsell of her Physitian, who prescribed her a long fastidious and chargeable purgation, compounded of diuers Oyles of holy Leagues, of insurrections of people, of rebellions of Nobility, of Cauteries, and other very bitter ingredients, whereby she had spoiled her stomacke, weakened her strength, and altogether lost her appetite; and that the infinite quantity of Syrrupes, and the many medicines which she had taken with such anguish, had wrought no other effect, but the acceleration of the disease, which without that vn lucky and vnseasonable purgation peraduenture shee should neuer haue had: Moreouer, that the many Leaches which were applyed to many parts of her body, had in such manner sucked the best vitall blood of the Gold of that *Spaine*, that through the weaknesse of her complexion, she was not able to euacuate those euill humours of *Flanders*, which had held her, and doe hold her oppressed. By which disorders, all occasioned through the naughty counsell of that imprudent Physitian, shee was so exasperated against him, that she had solemnely sworne to throw him out of the window, if to free her from future infirmities, he euer after ordained her any purgation; And that perceiuing how the paine which she hath at this instant in the Shoulder of *Holland*, was an apparant *Lues Gallica*, shee had demanded counsell of the same Physitian for to cleare herselfe of it, who vn mindfull of his former errors, had foolishly ordained the second purgation, wholly and altogether like the former, and that therefore being ouercome with paine, shee had throwne him out of the window, so punishing him at once for both the faults hee had committed: for it seemed vnto her, that hee had well deserued the misfortune of that resentment, seeing that by the accidents following, with such infelicity of her *Spaniards*, he had not learned to know, that purgations made before their time for diseases that are feared, doe not worke those good effects, which either the Physitian beleeueth, or the patient desireth.

## CHAP. 8.

*Most of the States of the world are censured in Parnassus for their errors.*

**A** *Pollo* carefull of nothing more, than to see the Princes of the world, should in the vpright gouernment of their States, giue the people such satisfaction as they ought, introduced into *Parnassus* (many ages since) this admirable custome: That euery yeare, the names of the chiefeſt Potentates of the earth, written vpon little ſcedules, should be put into an Vrne, and then being drawn forth one by one, the publike *censor* of politicall matters should (in the presence of the sacred Colledge of the learned) record the disorders, which he had obserued in the gouernment of their States; whereupon those Princes were bound either incontinently with satisfying reasons to defend such things as were objected against them, or else within a Moneth to reforme them.

An institution no doubt very noble and holy; for it hath effected, that in the progresse of so many ages, since first it was vsed, Princes haue corrected an infinitie of errours: besides, knowing that they are to bee called to so strict an account, it maketh them endeauour to liue so vertuously, that in the presence of so many Princes they neede not to blush. Vpon the day appointed then, most of the Potentates of the World appeared before *Apollo*: And Count *Baldazar Castiglione* the *Politickall Censor*, said vnto the reuerend Lord *Gionanni dalla Casa*, Nuntio for the Sea Apostolicall in this State, which was first drawne out of the Vrne; That it seemed vnto him a most scandalous matter, and indeed vnworthy the Greatnesse and Maiesty of the Popes, that in *Rome* should



Should be seene some potent Families, vnto whom it serued in stead of a rich patrimony to bee dependant on forraigne Princes, not very well affected to the greatnesse of the Apostolicke Sea, which in euery occasion were apt with the power of their Factions to giue the Popes much trouble; and that he might truly say, how in all his time he had not seene a more foule and execrable thing, than that which the Emperour *Charles* the fifth did, when with the noble Charge of the Kingdome of *Naples*, he rewarded the cruell seditions, and shamesfull treacheries, which the Cardinall *Pompeo Colonna*, vsed against the high Bishop *Clement* the seuenth. Then the Lord *Gionanni* demanded of the Count, how long it was since hee had conuersed in the *Romane* Court; who answering, Some seuenthy yeares past: the Nuncio replied, that returning thither now he should find, how by reason of the abundance of vertiuyce, which the *Pompei*, *Fabritij*, *Prosperi*, *Ascanij* of the family of *Colonna*; the *Virginij*, and other more principall Barons of the House of *Orsina* had eaten; the teeth of their Nephews and Grand-children were so set on edge, that they could hardly chaw their broth: for the Popes which had tyed those exorbitances about their fingers, knew so excellently how to practise the *Tarquini-an* precept, that they haue reduced those Poppies, which heretofore were as high as Cedars, to the humble stature of ridiculous dwarfes.

This answer satisfied the Count, who turning to the *Romane* Empire, next drawne out of the Urne, hee said vnto him, That the present disorders which were seene not only in the great patrimony of the House of *Austria*, but in all *Germany*, proceeded from the negligence of the present Emperour *Rodolphus*, and therefore hee much desired, that that Maiesty would with more care embrace the gouernment of his so many States; remembring, that Princes, rulers of mankind, bore vpon their shoulders the heauiest weight, and had in their hands the most laborious worke that any the painfulllest day-labourer whatsoeuer could exercise. The Censor was exceedingly thanked by the *Romane* Empire for this aduise;

advice; whereunto with much gravity he answered, That it was a disgrace common with all Princes, to be accused of negligence, when scandals arose in their States, although it notoriously appeared, that in regard they were occasioned by the practises of more mighty enemies, they could not possibly be auoyded by an vnderstanding Prince.

Wherefore it was to be considered, That the monstrous felicities, which the most mighty House of *Austria* haue had by inheriting with their Matches, the States of *Flanders*, the Kingdomes of *Spaine*, of *Naples*, *Sicilia*, *Bohemia*, *Hungary*, and *Portugall*, haue giuen all the Princes of *Germany*, of *Italy*, and of *Europe* such diabolicall jealousies, that they haue caused both the passed and present ruines, now beheld in their ancient patrimony: Whereunto the Emperors, which haue reigned since *Maximilian* the first of famous memory, albeit they were reputed most valorous and prudent Princes, could neuer after apply any salue, that did not infinitely exasperate the sore of the disorders of *Germany*, wherein had concurred such abundance of malignant humours, that it might truly be said, it was immedicable. Further, it was to be remembered, what small authority the moderne Emperors haue had in *Germany*, so that it were not onely a discourtesie, but open injustice to will one, that hath his hands fast bound behind him, to performe the acts of *Orlando*. Moreover, the qualitie of the Empire was to be regarded, which being electiue, they that serued, had more authority in it, then they that commanded. Besides the present weaknesse of the house of *Austria* in *Germany*, from whom (with the seditions of Religion) the hearts of their subiects are stollen; a theft so important, that they may well abandon those States as lost, wherein such dangerous seed is sown. Whereupon the present Emperour seeing himselfe deprived of the obedience of his subiects, desireth euery one to reflect vpon the quality of the Cousins, which the House of *Austria* hath in *Spaine*, and they shall find that the people of *Almaine* borne for their libertie, to secure themselves from the monstrous power of such a Family, take impious and wrongfull reuenges  
euen

even on those, which shal not be free frō the seruitude of the *Spaniards*, if for the sins of men they euer arriue to that point of commanding ouer the World; from which (by the meere goodnesse and mercy of God) they are put off as farre, as by their many deuices they haue laboured to come neere it. That also it was to be thought vpon, how the first that in *Italie*, and abroad, disinherited with all kinde of irreuerence, and disrespect, the Maiestie of the Empire, were those their Cousins of *Spaine*, as clearely appeared by the vsurpation of *Finale*, and other Imperiall feudes by them possessed. All which things, mouing dangerous humors without dissoluing them afterwards, doe cause the House of *Austria* in *Germany*, to be cruelly scourged by most powerfull enemies, whilest the *Spaniards* with their only menaces seeke to put the whole world into suspicion and distaste. And for conclusion, he desired all the sacred Colledge to consider, that to the miserable sterilitie of children, which is scene in the present Emperor, is adioyned a lamentable fertilitie of brethren; one of which incited by the most violent spurre of ambition, hath not doubred at last to goe about to ouerthrow his owne House, which is ready to fall. All accidents so vnhappy, that they would make euen *Salomon* himselfe seeme to the World a very foole.

These replies, which to all the Assistants seemed very weighty, satisfied the *Censor*, who turning him to the warlike *French Monarchie*, said vnto her; How all the *Vertuous* of *Parnassus* much desired of her, that shee would rule the furious, vnquiet, capricious, and exceeding imperuous dispositions of her *French*, reducing them to those termes of prudence, aduisednesse, and stayednesse of minde, which are scene in the noble *Italian*, and *Spanish* Nations; and how it much blemished her reputation, that the Kingdome of *France*, which holdeth a first place amongst the most principall Monarchies of the World, should be inhabited by men so infinitely rash. To this aduertisement the *French Monarchie* replied, That the *Censor* not well informed of the interests of her Kingdome, had censured for defects the



## 138 *The New-found Politicke.*

chiefest vertues, which she loued in her *French*. Folly, light-  
nelle, vnadvisednelle, and a precipitous nature were they,  
which had made her so feared, and formidable a *Queene*, be-  
cause her *French* with vnspeakable alacritie and forwardnes,  
would vpon the least nod of hers, expose themselves to  
those perils, whereunto other Princes could not with the  
rope, the cudgell, and the cruellest kinds of punishment  
compell their wise, aduised, and circumspect subiects: And  
that in the many warres, which she had held with most va-  
lorous Nations, she had learned to know, how an Armie  
framed of souldiers, which had little braine, and much cou-  
rage, to that they are led by a valiant, and discreet Generall,  
dorth carry away the victorie from those people, who pro-  
fesse more circumspection, and wisdom. This answer of  
the Monarchie of *France*, was so much the more commen-  
ded of *Castiglione*, by how much, regarding the qualitie of  
a mighty Kingdome, he knew that the *French* possessed all  
those endowments and vertues, which were requisite in  
a Nation, for to found, amplifie, and maintaine a great  
Empire.

Then the *Censor* turning to the powerfull Monarchie of  
*Spaine*, said vnto her, how it was euident, nothing gaue grea-  
ter satisfaction to all people in generall, but more particular-  
ly to those which were subiect to strange Nations, than the  
humanitie, and affable cariage of such as gouerned them;  
whereas she sending to the gouernments of *Naples*, *Milan*,  
and *Sicilia*, none but her owne *Spaniards*, they with their  
ordinarie *Castilian* statelinese, and insupportable *Spanish*  
pride, without all comparison far exceeding that, which  
the Kings of *Spaine* themselves either could, or would haue  
vsed in those States, did so exasperate euen their good and  
faithfull subiects, that the *Spanish* Dominion was growne  
infinitely odious: And that further, both in weighty, and  
sleight affaires, hee desired more quicke expeditions from  
her, seeing that by her too much delay, and perplexitie in  
the deliberation of important matters, shee had lost many  
faire occasions, that had presented themselves vnto her, for  
the

the enlarging of her Empire. The Monarchy of *Spaine* very much thanked the *Censor* for the aduertisements he had giuen her, and in her excuse answered, how that honourable Gentleman, which had a young wife, beyond all expression faire, but of a disposition inclined to lasciuiousnesse, should shew himselfe very discreet, if he desired, that a proper handsome seruant, whom he kept in his house, should be rather extremely hated, than any whit affected by his wife: and that vnto the delay in the resolution of her affaires, which she knew to be vicious and preiudiciall, it lay not in her power to giue remedie: for almighty God hauing not without important occasions created her *Spaniards* wholly, and altogether quite different in disposition from the *French*, whilest they in the deliberation of businesses, were rather precipitous, than execrative, she in her being so slow and irresolute, obeyed the will of God, who would haue it so.

The next drawne out of the Vrne was the Monarchie of *Poland*; vnto whom Count *Baldasars* said, How all the Princes of *Europe* could haue wished, that the present King *Sigismund* had vied towards those seditious Nobles, which last rebelled against him, some seueritie worthy so grieuous a fault, only to the end, that by their example, other Lords might haue beene deterred from committing the like. To this the *Polish* Monarchy answered, That those chastisements giuen to the Nobility, which in an hereditarie State would be commodious, haue alwaies proued in her electiue Kingdome preiudiciall: And how that Kingdome, which another receiueth in gift from a Nobility, in whose power is the election of the King, cannot without euident perill of falling from his greatnesse be gouerned with that rigour, which in other hereditary States is necessary; for that Senate, which out of an election of loue giueth another a Kingdome, if it be prouoked by the powerfull passion of hate, knoweth also how to reassume it, in regard well-advised Senators are wont to reserue vnto themselues those necessary instruments, whereby vpon euery occasion of euill satisfaction, they may recall their vsed liberalitie: And that the pre-

sent King *Sigismund* being the first of his House, which had reigned in *Poland*, hee was to direct the aime of all his thoughts to no other scope so much, as by an extraordinary indulgence to win the hearts of the Nobilitie of his State, that so with a gratefull memory of his clemency, he might perpetuate the succession of such a Kingdome in his Blood. An advertisement most necessary for *Sigismund* his King, by reason the *Polacks*, although their King be elective, doe never defraud the Royall Blood of the succession, if hee that reigneth, can tell how to get the generall love of the Nobilitie. For the *Polonians* being a Nation, that know not how to live in an absolute liberty, doe so abhor all manner of servitude, that that King among them (a matter common to all elective Princes) shall be most oculative, and vigilant in the matters of his State, that least seemeth either to see or know any thing. Not only the *Censor*, but the whole Colledge of the *Virtuous*, admitted the iustification of the *Polack* Monarchy for excellent.

Hereupon the Count turning himselfe to the vast *Ottoman* Empire, said vnto him, That the cruelty which hee vsed, onely vpon light suspicions, against his chiefeest ministers, was held by all the world to be a bloody course; it being a receiued opinion, that men of extraordinary valour and merit, should not be laid hands on, but for great and proued offences: And that when the *Ottoman* Princes did euen iustly take away the liues of their ministers, the custome of seizing vpon their Estates to their owne vse, and thereof vtterly depriving the children, did scandalize all good iustice, because it seemed, that with such cruell rigour, the Estates, rather than the faults of the delinquents, were hunted after. To this so open a correction, the *Ottoman* Empire answered with admirable grauity, That he was growne to that greatnesse wherein he was seene, by the onely two most powerfull meanes of reward without measure, and punishment without end: And that the sole foundation of the quiet of euery State, being placed in the fidelity of the most important ministers, Princes were not to seeke any thing  
with



with more care, than with immense rewards to allure them vnto faithfulness, and with infinite punishments to terrifie them from trecheries: That those ministers which haue in their power, the Forces, Command, and Gouernments of States, not being able to erre, but in most important matters, it were the counsell of a foolish Prince, vpon suspitions of that moment, to arraigne, accuse, and heare the iustifications of the offender; but in such a case, the Prince which will runne no danger, ought to endeouour to surprise his minister vpon the sudden, and to deale so securely, that the execution of the punishment may precede euen the accusation it selfe: That many times it had fallen out, that he with a sudden chastisement had preuented the consummation of most foule treasons: Which resolution, though he acknowledged to be most seuer, yet he knew it had so wrought, that there were neuer seene in his State any Counts *St. Paul*, Princes of *Orange*, Dukes of *Guise*, *d'Anmale*, *du Maine*, *de Mercure*, and other foule monsters of disloyaltie, which, with the shame of those Princes, that with halters, poynards, and axes, knew not how to preuent such dangerous offences, haue beene seene elsewhere: It being a rule in matters of State as common, as secure, That that minister, which giueth to his Prince the least shadow of suspicion of his faith, incurreth a capitall paine, because those Captaines which haue the care of Armies in their power, are bound, like the wiues of Honourable personages, to liue with such puritie of minde, that they be free not only from blame, but from the least suspicion of a blame-worthy thought. That touching the seizure of his *Bashawes* estates after their death, he thought he might truly say, that the entertainments, gifts, and wealth, wherewithall other Princes rewarded their ministers, in comparison of those inexhaustible riches which he bestowed on his well-deseruing Officers, were vile, and poore, as those Royall Treasures, which *Rusten*, *Mahomet*, *Ibrahim*, and infinite others left behind them after their decease, haue fully testified: That the greatest regard which a Prince ought to haue in rewarding his ministers,

consisteth in providing, that the vnmeasurable riches, where-  
 with he bought of them infinite fidelitie, may not possibly  
 at any time be conuerted to the prejudice of him, that vsed  
 the liberalitie: That from the grieuous disorders fallen out  
 in the States of other Potentates, he had found it to be a mat-  
 ter most pernicious vnto Princes, that the extraordinary ri-  
 ches left by a deseruing Minister, should passe vnto his chil-  
 dren, not hauing first deserued it ( by their verue, valour,  
 and fathers said fidelitie ) of the Prince: That he had not out  
 of couetousnesse, as many misindged, confiscated the great in-  
 heritances of his *Bashawes*, but that by the commoditie  
 thereof, those subiects should not be idle, and consequently  
 vicious, which being descended of fathers of notable valour,  
 gaue the Prince assured hope they would imitate the ver-  
 tues of their Progenitors: That the gate of his Treasure stood  
 perpetually open to the heires of his Ministers, to restore  
 them their fathers inheritances twice doubled, when they  
 with their fidelitie and valour should deserue them; and how  
 much the riches of men vicious, and subiect to ambition,  
 were apt to disturbe the peace of any Kingdome, how great  
 soeuer, well appeared by the fresh examples, which he had  
 scene both in *France* and *Flanders*.

Whilst the *Ottoman* Empire spake in this manner, he ob-  
 serued that the renowned *French* Monarchy, with the sha-  
 king of her head, seemed to declare, that she no way appro-  
 ued those reasons: whereupon somewhat the more moued,  
 he said thus: Mighty Queene, my custome in seizing vpon  
 the estates of my *Bashawes*, is profitable for the greatnesse,  
 and quiet of my State; and in regard of the friendship that  
 is betwixt vs, I would to God, the same course were obserued  
 in your *France*; for you know full well, to what vse *Henry*  
 the Duke of *Guize* conuerted the exceeding riches, where-  
 withall the liberall Kings *Francis* the first, and *Henry* the se-  
 cond rewarded the merits of Duke *Francis* his father. You,  
 and I, and all those that raigne doe know, how the sweetest  
 bait that can allure men, is a Crowne, and there being no  
 man, which for to taste neuer so little of it, but would hold it

a great pleasure for to expose euen his life to manifest danger of losing it, Princes ought to be most vigilant in keeping with extremest seueritie the passages thereunto closed vp against all men: nay, they ought to accomodate their affaires in such sort, that no priuate man whatsoeuer should once hope to taste of so sweet a thing: And I tell you freely, that if your Duke of *Guize* had in my State but onely thought that, which with such publike scandall he boldly put in execution in your Kingdome of *France*, I would the very first day haue giuen him that blow, whereunto your King *Henry* the third, although he were incited vnto it by the greater part of the Princes of *Italy*, could neuer be drawne, vntill the very last houre of his shamefull disgraces, and euen at that instant, when the sore of the *French* vprores was become an incurable vicer; for where ambition raigneath among Nobles, Princes are constrained to shew themselves all seueritie, continually keeping scaffolds in readines, & prepared, to punish the seditious and rebellious; and their Treasury open, to reward the quiet, and the loyall; that Prince being vnworthy to command, that hath not the vnderstanding how to make himselfe be obeyed; neither can there be a more scandalous matter scene, nor met withall in a State, then that the Prince should lue in jealousy of an Officer, which ought to tremble before him. But it is the propertie of you the Princes of *Christendome*, making profession of Learning, and directing your selues by rules of policie, to call me Barbarous, and my secure way of proceeding, Tyrannicall; whilst in the meane time, yee suffer your selues to be reduced by your Heroicall vertues of clemencie, and gentlenesse, to shamefull tearmes of enduring vnworthy things.

It is not possible to deliuer, how much the *Ottoman* Empire offended all the *Vertuous* of the sacred Colledge with his discourse, who standing vp, told him in great disdain, how they could proue with present reasons, that all which he had said, were most wicked conceits, vnworthy to be spoken by any person that had a soule, or to be heard of men, that made profession of honour. Whereunto the *Ottoman* Empire



## 144 *The New-found Politicke.*

Empire answered, smiling, That others in the gouernment of Kingdomes might haue regard to *Vertue*, and I know not what, but for his part he would neuer be perswaded, but that the quiet and peace of States ought to be preferred before all other humane interests whatsoeuer.

Then the *Censur*, to cut off so odious a dispute, turning to the great Duchie of *Moscovy*, said vnto him, That the most noble prerogatiue of raigning ouer people, which were louers of Learning, and excellently *Vertuous*, was the second amongst the greatnesse of a Prince: Whereas he by so endeavouring to bring vp his subjects in a grosse ignorance, reaped no small blame, if not much disreputation; because euery one skorned him, for that, expelling the famous liberall Arts out of his State, he had onely permitted his people to learne the benefit of writing and reading. To this Censure the Duchie of *Moscovy* answered, That the dreadfull fire, which he had obserued Learning had euer kindled in those States, where it had been admitted, had made him resolute not to suffer in any sort, that so scandalous a Cockle should be sowed in his Duchie; for men being the heards of Princes, as sheepe the flocks of priuate persons, it were extreme folly to arme those gentle sheepe their subiects with the malice, which Learning engrafteth into their dispositions, that attaine vnto it; whereas otherwise, in regard of that harmelesse simplicitie, wherewith Almighty God hath created them, they may be commodiously ruled and gouerned, be they neuer so many in number, by one Prince alone: And how he held for infallible truth, that if the *Germans* and *Hollanders* had been maintained by their Princes in the simplicitie of their ancient ignorance, and withall it had been prohibited, that the pure minde of those Nations might not haue beene contaminated with the plague of *Greeke* and *Latine* learning, without all doubt they had neuer had the judgement, with such a ruine of their old Religion, and destruction of many Princes, that before ruled ouer those Prouinces, to know how to frame those perfect formes of *Commonweales* in their countries, whereunto neither the wit of *Sa-*  
lon,

lon, the wisdom of *Plato*, nor all the Philosophy of *Aristotle*, could ever arrive.

This answer so moved the *Censor*, and all the sacred College of the Learned, that with threatening looks they said, how the reasons alledged by the Great Dutchy of *Moscow*, were open blasphemies; and it seemed the Learned were ready to make good their words with deeds, when the greater part of the mightiest Monarchies were seen to betake themselves to their weapons, for defence of the *Moscouite*; who growing more audacious upon the forward assistance of so many Potentates, boldly said, If any one would deny, that Learning did not infinitely disturb the quiet, and good government of States; and that a prince might not with more facilitie rule a Million of ignorants, then an hundred learned, that were made to command, and not to obey, he lyed in his throat. The *Vertuous* upon this daring defiance grew extremely incensed, and stoutly replied, That the *Moscouite* had spoken with an insolence, worthy of an ignorant, and how they could also prove unto him, that men without learning were Asses and Calves with two legs.

Now were they almost ready to go together by the eares, when the *Censor* cryed out, Forbeare, and carry due respect to this place, where we are assembled to amend disorders, and not to commit scandals; whereupon such was the reverence every one bare to the Maiestie of the *Censor*, that both the Princes, and the Learned, although they were transported with anger and disdain, became suddenly pacified.

All being quiet, then the *Censor* said unto the famous *Venetian* Libertie, which next was drawn out of the Urne, That the hardest matter to be found in an *Aristocracie*, as she well knew, was to restraints the young Nobilitie, who with their licentiousness distasting the better sort of Citizens, had many times occasioned the ruine of most famous Common-weales; And that he to his great griefe had heard, how the yong Nobilitie of *Venice* with their proud demeanour had offended many honourable Citizens of that State; who exceedingly complained, that whilst the insolency of  
V the

## 146 *The New-found Politicke.*

the Nobilitie increased, the chastisements for it decreased; And that therefore he remembred her, that it was a dangerous point in an Aristocracie, when those which were to glory for that they were farre from those dangers, whereunto such are subiect, as are to obey the humour of a Prince, be heard to complaine, that they are oppressed by many Tyrants. Hereunto the *Venetian* Libertie answered, That the disorder recounted by the *Censor* was true, and withall dangerous; but that the authoritie of commanding, was so annexed to pride and insolencie, that they seemed to be borne both at one birth: And that the licentiousnesse, which the Nobilitie of all Aristocracies vseth towards the Citizens, was by all the greatest men, that haue discoursed of Common-weales, reputed a desperate cure; for although it was most necessary, that insolencies should be restrained with seuerer paines, yet on the other side, an Aristocracie was to abstaine as much as possibly might be from publike punishments of Noblemen, albeit seditious; to the end that their shamefull suffering might not be an occasion to disinherite the whole Nobilitie it selfe of that respect which is due to them from the people; for having the gouernment of the State in their hands, the interest of the publike conseruation thereof requireth, that they be held in highest reputation: And although in her *Venice*, disobedient and insolent Noblemen were not seene to be so often punished, betweene the two pillars in the *Piazza* of Saint *Marke*, as it seemeth many desired, yet by the great Councell the *Pregadi*, the Colledge, and other supream Magistrates, that dispence the publike Charges, those seditious Noblemen, which were discovered to carry a tyrannicall minde, weret cruelly afflicted with the torment of shamefull repulses: And that many subjects of most Noble Houses are seene in *Venice*, whose ancient reputation for their demerits was maimed by Arquebuses charged with bullets of paper; and that being stricken downe with such kind of shot, they could neuer rise since to honours and dignities; things wherein consisteth the life of the Noblemen of an Aristocracie: And that to  
excruciate



excruciate a body, a greater torture could not be deuised, no not by *Perillus* himselfe, then that which once a Nobleman of *Venice* experienced, when in a concurrence of the Honourablest charges, he saw one yonger then himselfe passe before him, onely because he was knowne to the Senate to be more deseruing. *Castiglione* did not onely admit the justification of the *Venetian* Libertie, but also did infinitely commend the circumspection and seueritie which shee vsed in punishing her Nobilitie, vpon occasion of any demerit or defect.

Then the *Censor* said vnto the Duchy of *Sanoy*, That his State being seated in the Confines of *France* and *Italy*, he was necessited with all carefulnesse to maintaine himselfe neutrall betweene those Princes, with whom hee confined; but in those last rumors of *France*, by discouering himselfe openly to be wholly *Spanish*, he had put, not onely his owne, but the States of all the Princes of *Italie* in great trouble: And that whilst with the bellows of his forces he blew the fire of the *French* vprores, kindled by the *Spaniards* ambition, hee ought to beleue, that that flame was to burne vp friends and kinred, before euer it could get to the other *Italian* Potentates that were enemies. The Duchy of *Sanoy* answered the *Censor* very readily, That the adherence of his last Duke to the *Spaniards*, was true, but the faire occasion hee had of three seuens in his hand, euen forced him to let vp his rest, hoping to encounter the most famous *Primiera*, that euer any other Prince whatsoeuer had at Cards; to which venture he was the rather carryed, because he was assured hee could loose but that money, which at that game he had won before: That afterwards, though by his ill lucke the fourth Card, which was dealt him, proued to be a Coat of affront, wherewith he had made the worst hit, that could be encountered on the whole pack of Cards, neuerthelesse he knew, that the brauest mindes would confesse, that albeit the resolution was very dangerous, yet not to wrong the Cards, they would haue played no otherwise themselues. The *Censor* apprehending the Metaphor, very much commended the Magna-

nimous resolution of that Duke; who, for that hee might from a small feauer haue receiued in gift the Empire of the greater part of the world, not only without any note of imprudence, but to his infinit glory, at such time as so resolutely he cast the Dye of all the greatnesse of his fortune vpon the Table of Chance, he might well speake those famous words anew, *Or Caesar, or nothing.*

Then the *Censor* turned him to the Noble great Dutchy of *Toscan*, and sharply reprehending him, for going with his Galleyes as it were prouoking of Waspes, hee recorded vnto him, the misery and calamities which the Knights of Saint *Iohn* suffered at *Rhodes*, at *Tripoli*, and the great danger, that lastly they ranne at *Malta*, onely because they would imprudently haue tyed squibbes to the Bulls taile; And that euery wise Christian Prince ought rather to fauour the present carelesnesse of the *Turkes*, then to waken them with injuries of little profit; nay, such as brought others much dammage, and necessite them to apply their mindes anew vnto maritime affaires, which in these times they had euen abandoned: Also he remembered him, how infinite people daily complained, for that, by his hindering *Italy* of the trade of the commodities of the *Leuant*, all drugges that came from beyond the Seas, were growne to an excessiue rate. To this correction the great Dutchy of *Toscan* answered, That the power of a Prince could not be termed perfect, which with a number of armed Vessels had not some Dominion on the Sea: And that his Galleyes were not onely very necessary for the *Toscan* greatnesse, but also for the securitie of the Libertie of all *Italy*, as seruing for a Schoole of Mariners, for a Seminary of Captaines and Souldiers at Sea: That he confessed the dammage, which they did to the Trade of Merchandise, but withall, he desired it might be considered, that the mysterie of Warre, either by Land or by Sea, could not be learned by Souldiers, nor exercised by Princes without prejudice to others: And that *Toscan* breeding much filthinesse of fantastickall vnquiet braines, and extranagant humours, he had therefore great occasion for those Gallies, that might

might serue, as it were, to carry forth all the filth of his State, and thereby keepe it cleane, imploying such onely for Gallies-slaves in them, as had done euill before, and that in regard of their vnquiet nature, were like to doe worse after.

This excuse of the Great Dutchy of *Tescan* was approoued both by the *Censor*, and all the sacred Colledge. Wherevpon the Count said vnto the Libertie of *Genoa*, who was last drawne out of the Vrne, That the excessive vse of Exchanges, which shee permitted vnto her Nobilitie, caused that great disorder of enriching the priuate, and withall of impouerishing the publike, whose reuenues would haue risen to huge summes of Gold, if the reall riches of her Nobilitie had beene imployed in a iust Trade of Merchandise.

The *Genese* Libertie with a readinesse, that gaue a particular gust to all the Learned, answered, How it was true, that Exchanges doe worke that effect, which the *Censor* had mentioned, and therefore were most pernicious in any Monarchy whatsoeuer; howbeit that notwithstanding they might bee permitted in a well-ordered Common-wealth, without any prejudice of the publike interests; because the richest and securest Treasures of a free State, are the riches of the Nobility, and Citizens together; a matter which falleth not out in a Monarchy, where betweene the commings in of the Prince, and the meanes of priuate men, there runneth a long wall of eight Stories high built by *Mine* and *Thine*: Further, that in a Monarchy the mutation of the State commonly followeth with little or no prejudice to the people, onely changing the name of *Matthew*, to that of *Martin*; but in the subuersions of Common-weales, where liberty is changed into seruitude, there the proper substance of priuate men, is the publike treasure; for then will they profusely spend all that euer they haue, for to defend their owne libertie euen to the last gaspe.



## CHAP. 9.

*The Monarchie of Spaine inuitem the Cardinall of Toledo, to be her Theologian, which he refuseth, and why.*

**T**He report goeth in this Court, that the Mighty Monarchy of *Spaine*, by her chiefe Secretarie inuitem the worthy Cardinall of *Toledo*, with allowance of a large pension, to assist as her Theologian in the Royall Councell of State, to the end that nothing should be determined there, which might be against his conscience: This matter filled the whole Court with maruell, in regard euery one knew how little that Prelate in the rebenediction of the most Christian King *Henry* the 4. fauoured the affaires of his Prince; for which cause no man could imagine the occasion, wherefore so wite a *Queene* in a businelle of such weight, should vse the seruice of so diffident a subiect. Those which make profession best to vnderstand the manner of proceeding of the aduised *Spanish* Nation, euen in this resolution acknowledged the inueterate prudence of the Kings of *Spaine*, whose proper custome it is neuer to be at quiet, vntill that with pensions, with honourable charges, with all kinde of louing demonstrations, and humane deuices, they haue drawne vnto their party all such great subiects, as they see to be alienated from their Interest, and from whom they know, that one day yet they may receiue seruices. The chiefeft Confidents of so great a Cardinall, deliner, that his Lordship very gladly accepted the noble Charge propounded vnto him; howbeit with this condition, (which by the *Spaniards* was presently reiected) that whensoever with the authority of the Sacred Scriptures, with

with the Doctrine of the holy Fathers, with the ordinances of the Canons, he should make the Royall Councell capable, how the resolutions made in it, were disagreeing from the Lawes of God, and men; hee alone then would haue power to hinder the execution of them; and all to the end, the world might know, That the Royall Theologian in that Councell was only to helpe the conscience of his King with the will of God, not to serue for a maske to establish the Dominion of Kingdoms ouer men; for it seemed too shamefull a matter vnto him, that such a one as he should be imployed to authorise the diabolicall impiety of the moderne *reason of State*, and to make most stinking *Assa fetida* appeare vnto simple people very excellent Muske.

---

CHAP. 10.

*The Spaniards attempt the acquisition of Sauoy,  
but doe not preuaile.*

---

Seeing that for to draw the *French* naile out of the table of *Milan*, where it was fixed, the ill-aduised *Italian* Princes had made vse of the *Spanish* pickaxe, which entred in such manner into the very table it selfe, that it was neuer possible since to draw it forth with any kinde of pincers whatsoeuer, all the Potentates of *Europe*, and especially the *Italian* Princes, which perceiued, that the *Spaniards* after the seruitude of the *Milanese*, openly aspired to the absolute Dominion of all *Italy*, to the end they might secure that remainder of liberty, which is yet resting in her, agreed amongst themselues, that euery fise and twentieth yeare, the Chaine which the *Spaniards* haue forged for the *Italian* seruitude, should with exact diligence be measured by persons thereunto

thereunto deputed. And comming (a few daies since) accordingly to meature it, the *Italian* Princes to their infinite amazement found, that so odious a Chaîne was increased with five most preiudiciall links; presently whereupon the Politicall Smiths were called, who very carefully made an assay of the yron added to the Chaîne, and they found that the first linke was forged at *Piombino*, the other at *Finale*, the third at *Correggio*, the fourth at *Porto Lungone*, and the last at *Monaco*. Greatly did the Princes maruell at the strangeness of this accident, and many of them were ashamed, that through their carelesse simplicitie the *Spaniards* had increased the Chaîne of the *Italian* seruitude, much more in peace, than they could haue done in war with foure Armies. With these strange exorbitances, the *Italian* Princes were so incensed against the *Spaniards*, that they told them freely, how if they did not containe themselves within the bounds of honesty, and modesty; if the *Italian* files would not suffice to reduce that miserable Chaîne to his due measure, they would make vse of the *French*; and if with them neither they could obtaine their intent, they would procure enough from *England*, and *Germany*; yea, and in case of desperation they would not sticke to furnish themselves with those excellent damasked ones, that are made in *Turkie*. Whilest the *Italian* Princes were in this contestation, there arriued a Poste, which in all haste had beene dispatched out of *Italy* vnto them with this certaine aduertisement, That the *Spaniards* were forging another linke in *Sauoy*, to be added vnto the Chaîne of their seruitude: in regard of which newes, the renowned *Venetian* Liberty instantly opened her famous Arsenall, and all the Princes of *Italy* ran to arme themselves; the warlike *French* Monarchy commanded her Nobilitie to horse, all *Germany* put themselves in order to passe the mountaines, and the numerous Fleets of the *English*, and *Hollanders*, set saile towards the Straits of *Gibraltar*; when iust in the nick, euen as all the World was in Armes, a new Poste arriued, who pacified the minds of men with this intelligence, That indeed it was true, how the *Spaniards* had laboured



laboured with all possible industry to forge that most important Linke of *Sway*, but that they had sweat in vaine, because in the soldering, it broke.

CHAP. II.

*The Duke d'Alva being arriued at Parnassus, in complementing with Prospero Colonna, they fall foule about defrauding the Colonies of their Titles.*

**D**On *Hernando de Toledo Duke d'Alva*, a few daies since, arriued at *Parnassus*, and by expresse order from *Apolla*, a diligent examination of his actions being made by the military men, he was found worthy to be admitted into *Parnassus* amongst those famous Captains, which without effusion of blood, knew how to vanquish an enemy, more by patience, and art, than by open force, or valour; that durst hazard the fortune of Kingdoms vpon the doubtfull chance of a Battell. But because *Lodouico Guicciardino*, an vnderstanding Writer of the affaires of *Flanders*, had preferred a Complaint, how that for certaine matters not very pleasing, which he had written of the Duke, hee had beene ill intreated by him, therefore he staid a long time to cleare himselfe of such an imputation; for there was an Edict of *Apolla* very rigotously obserued in *Parnassus*, whereby that Prince, or private man, was declared to be infamous, which durst offer any wrong to any Historian, or other Writer, for things written by him not very honourable, but yet true. Howbeit, of such power were the Dukes friends, that *Guicciardino* was contented to reuoke his complaint,

## 154 *The New-found Politicke.*

plaint, whereupon with all the greatest solemnitie hee was admitted into *Parnassus*, and had a place in his Maiesties Company of men at Armes, which was commanded by that famous *Quintus Fabius Maximus*; who for the excellencie of his well-aduised warinesse, was surnamed *Cunctator*. And it hapned, that amongst the other Princes, and Captaines, which the said Duke visited, one was the most excellent Lord *Prospero Colonna*, by whom he was receiued with all kinde of honour; and so much the more, because hee vnderstood that the Duke made a publike profession of being the disciple, follower, and imitator of his slow, but sure way of making warre. Howbeit, a strange and troublesome accident fell out in this visitation; for at the first meeting, the Duke hauing giuen the Lord *Prospero* the Title of *your Honour*, he was so incensed with disdain, that taking himselfe to be highly wronged by so vile a title, with an angry voice he said; Duke, I had thought thou wert come hither, to honour one that is greater than thy selfe, not to vnderalue him; but because it is the fashion of the *Colonesi* to answer the injuries of words with deeds, goe out of this house, and in the street (with my sword in mine hand) I will proue vnto thee, that all those, which vse such base termes to men of my ranke, deserue not to be admitted into the company of honourable persons. The Duke remained much astonished to see that great Captaine take the matter so hainously at his hands; and going to withstand the Lord *Prospero*, who offered to thrust him out of the chamber, they fell to grapple one with another: And because the *Spaniards*, which were in company with the Duke, seeing him in such termes with *Colonna*, entred into the chamber to assist him, the *Italians* which belonged vnto the Lord *Prospero* did the like; whereupon in regard of the number of persons in so strait a place, there ensued a cruell fray; the noise whereof comming into the street, was the cause that the newes of so dangerous an accident was suddenly carried to *Apello*; who in all haste dispatched thither the Regent of the *Vicaria* with the guard of Archers, who freed the Duke out of the Lord *Prosperoes*

*Prospero's* hands: and the vprere being quieted, he commanded the *Spaniards*, that had beene very ill handled, to returne home to their houses; Thereupon the Lord *Prospero*, to preuent any sinister information that might haue beene giuen against him; presented himselfe before *Apollo*, vnto whom (the same goeth) with a troubled countenance hee vsed these words: Sir, it is well knowne, that men of the family of *Colonna*, of the quality I am of, haue alwaies inioyed the title of Excellencie, *Antequam Abraham fieret*, and ere the *Spaniards* were in *rerum natura*; wherefore for that Nation to abute a man of my ranke, as the Duke of *Alva* did me but now, is most insupportable; for if the vilenesse of him that offendeth, doth infinitely aggrauate the iniurie with him that is offended, how is it possible, that an *Italian* Baron of my quality, should containe himselfe within the bounds of modestie; seeing himselfe vnderualue by that Nation, whose miseries, not about foure daies agoe to speake of, so moued the whole World to compassion, that thorowout all Churches they were recommended to the charitie of well-disposed Christians, of whom almes were gathered, to free them from the miserable seruitude, wherein they were so grieuously oppressed by the *Moors* of *Granada*. The *Spaniards* enioy the dominion of the greater part of *Italy*; where, by such as I am, notwithstanding that dally they threaten it with a cruell, and vniuersall seruitude, they are loued, honoured, and euen serued: With their prodigious auarice they haue depriued vs of our wealth; and in that lamentable sacke of *Rome* with their vnexpressable lust they violated the honour of our chastest *Maisons*. And now, in exchange of so abiect a patient, they would also take from vs this little honour of breach we enioy, and these miserable Titles, the vnhappy remaines, and deplorable reliques of the *Italian* reputation: Which is a matter so hard to be digested, that by euery honourable *Italian* Baron it ought to be reuenged, not with complaining words, as I doe, but with daggers points.

It is reported by them that were then present, how all the



## 156 The New-found Politicke.

while the Lord *Prospero* was speaking, *Apollo* did nothing but smile, and that when vpon his conclusion he burst out into those words, how the *Spaniards* abuses towards the *Italians* were to be reuenged with daggers points, he fell to laughing our-right, and said, *Prospero*, thou art, and euer wert too much giuen over to choller: and I am inforced to tell thee, how it infinitely mislikes me, that such a one as thou, who hast alwaies made a particular profession of prudence, shouldst maruell, that *flaues*, which for twenty yeares together haue beene fed in the Gallies with course and mouldy Bisket, when they light vpon a batch of new white Mancher, should fill their bellies till they are ready to cracke againe: Whereas that raging appetite of theirs, and euery other dishonest act, which they vse, to allswage their hunger, ought to be so farre from seeming odious vnto honest men which behold it, that it should rather moue them to pitie. Therefore doe yee *Italians* likewise permit, that the *Spaniards*, men but new in this World, and lately got out of the seruitude of the *Moor*es of *Granada*, may glut themselves with meat so delicate to their taste, as are the honourable Titles, which they haue found in *Italy*: for I assure thee, that when they shall be cloyed with such vanities they also will become, as the *French* are, such courteous Gallants, that they will willingly giue the Title of *Excellency* euen to their horse-boyes, much more to such as thou art. And I tell thee, that if thou hadst that prudence, and that perfect knowledge of the World, as I wish thou haddest, thou wouldest very well perceiue, that those exorbitances, and that so odious manner of proceeding, which the *Spaniards* vse in *Italy*, whereof thou so complaine, is euen as so much sweet sugar for you *Italians*, and bitter payson for the *Spaniards*; who if to their valour, to their aduisednesse, and vnspokeable ambition which they haue to raigne, they had affable and courteous manners annexed, with the vtter destruction of that remnant of Libertie, which is yet out of the Lions iawes, they would soone become absolute Masters of the World. All which are intolencies, that with daggers points,

not

not by you *Italians*, but by the Monarchy of *Spaine* herselfe, ought to be reuenged with all kinde of cruelty on her *Spanish* ministers, who with their vanitie distaste the good seruants of so great a *Queene*, and make her gouernment nothing acceptible to her subjects: A disorder that bringing much difficultie to the substance of that vniuersall Monarchy, whereunto it is not possible she can arriue with the publike hatred of all *Italy*, hath high need of remedy.

With this answer *Apollo* returned the Lord *Prospero* exceeding well satisfied to his house, after whom the Duke *d'Alva* appeared before his Majesty with all his family wonderfull melancholy, which cast such milke in their faces, that the *Spaniards* seemed not so blacke, as ordinarily those *Moors* that come out of *Granada* vse to be. Then *Apollo* interrupting the complaint which the Duke was about to make against the Lord *Colonna*, said; Duke, I am much displeased with the disorder, which I vnderstand hath happened, and so much the more, by how much the cause of such an vpror is not very iust, nor withall very honourable on thy side: And vpon this occasion it pleaseth me to remember vnto you *Spaniards*, that to be not only niggards, as to all men yee are knowne, but not to vse prodigallie in giuing vnto others those Titles, which are desired, is a manifest signe of malignitie, because the ingenuous nobilitie of a Baron is knowne, by shewing little couerousnesse in receiuing Titles, and much liberalitie in giuing them: For euen by ouer-much, not by due honour, doth greater reputation accrue to him that giueth, than to him that receiueth it. And you *Spaniards* that vse such austeritie in desiring great Titles only for your selues, are not a whit increased in reputation, but rather are become so odious and ridiculous to all men, that the *Italians* in their Comedies, haue deseruedly introduced the personage of the *Spaniard* to represent vnto the world a perfect *Braggartina*, I wonder yeshould not perceiue, hat in thinking to arriue vnto the Dominions of the earth by abusing men, is the wrong way to the wood; The minds of men (Duke) are taken with the bait of humanitie, with the whistle of gra-

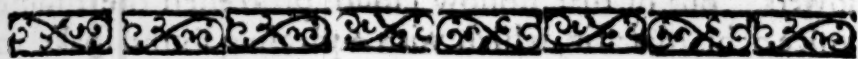
## 158 *The New-found Politicke.*

titude, of courtesie, of gentlenesse; and that Fowler would  
 shew himselfe very ignorant, that should go with a drumme  
 into a Doue-house for to take Pigeons, as I see you *Spaniards*  
 foolishly doe. Moreouer, I tell you, that if euer any Nation  
 were to make a bait of dignities, for to allure the *Italians* to  
 fall into the nets of your Dominions, and light vpon the  
 Limbush of your seruitude, it is you *Spaniards*, for the ends  
 which ye haue vpon *Italy*: Withall yee are to consider, that  
 the States, which yee possesse, of *Naples*, and *Milan*, are fast-  
 ned vnto you with waxe; for ye shall command ouer those  
 two members no longer, then til the *Italians* resolute to chase  
 you from thence; who if they could be assured, that after  
 your ruine, they should not fall into the power of the *French*,  
 ye should quickly know, that only with a little disturbance,  
 which they could giue you in the Port of *Genoua*, they would  
 put you into a thousand intricate difficulties: all matters that  
 should admonish you to giue satisfactiō, at leastwise in words,  
 to them, whom in regard of your interests in *Italy*, yee are ob-  
 liged to respect. As for the iniurie, which you say you haue  
 receiued from the Lord *Prospero*, I tell you plainly, that what-  
 soeuer affront shall be done you vpon any such like Titular  
 occasion, I will not only be insensible of it, but I will thinke  
 you haue desirously sought it. Then the Duke would haue  
 excused himselfe with saying, that from his King he had in-  
 struction how to carry himselfe towards the *Italian* Barons  
 in the particular of Titles, when *Apollo* told him, that the  
*Spanish* abuses to the *Italians* were not to extend but only to  
 the *Neapolitans*, and *Milanese*; and his Maiestie also added,  
 That if too much passion did not blind the *Spaniards*, they  
 might easily see, how their *Grandes*, whom *Spain* it selfe  
 could not containe, and that in *Italy*, would play the Giants,  
 compared with the *Romane* Barons; and those of meane sta-  
 ture would proue but dwarffs. Hereupon a cloud, as white  
 as snow, beginning by little and little to couer the person of  
*Apollo*, the Priests that were about him perceiued how his  
 Maiestie would prophecie; so that euery one falling pro-  
 strate on the ground, and with the rest, the Duke and his fol-  
 lowers;



lowers; out of that hollow cloud proceeded the diuine voice of his Maiestie, which with a pleasing sound spake in this sort: I foretell vnto you *Spaniards*, that with your rough and odious manner of proceeding, yee will one day compell the *Italian Nobilitie*, which is the Mistris of the cruell *Sicilian Vespres*, to plot some bloody *Neapolitan Euen-song* against you; it being the proper custome of the *Italians*, with greater rage to reuenge the abuses of words, than the offences of blowes; as they that hauing short patience, and long hands, are borne not only with an heart most inclined to great resolutions, but that doe not vse to reuenge iniuries with all kinde of cruelty, before they are quite forgotten by those that did them. And with your owne ruine, you will then finde them, with swords in their hands, to be *Paladine Orlandoes*, when ye shall perswade your selues they are become most suffering Asses.

The



## The Poste of Parnassus to the READER.

**T**Hese Papers comming by chance into my hands, I perceiued there was something in them that I could not perceiue; wherefore I thought best to communicate them with better vnderstandings: for my part I could see no hurt in them, but did imagine by that little good which I saw, there was much more that I could not see, and therefore iudged them fit for all mens eyes. Yet finding the names of *Spaine* and *Austria*, or *Austria* and *Spaine*, (pardon me, politicke Reader, for I am not certaine which should haue prioritie; and I know in such Catholike points, a little error is deadly) so often inserted, I durst not be too bold with sacred things. For I well saw those two names jointly considered, are now growne of such estimation, as all Nations & Kings bend their knees, & doff their bonnets at the naming of them, more superstitiously for destroying, than reuerently at the Name of Iesus for sauing. Therefore I could not resolute, whether it were treason or sacriledge, or I wot not what greater sin, to touch sacred things profanely with common and vnwasht hands; especially when I saw all such as had done the like, or lesse then thus, made miserable examples of disobedience, as if they had offended *Adam* himselfe, or a house miraculously raised vp by God, or rather originally created in nature, to rule ouer all the world in *Adams* stead; and that to be the son of a King, could not protect an offender in this kind from punishment, yea, from being cast out of his paradise. O (thought I) when I saw this, how worthy is he, that doth thus to be counted only the Catholique King: for he is a King of Kings indeed, fit to be the executioner of his Holinesse diuine Decrees, and to consume

sume all with Lightning, where the sacred fulminations went before. Tremble all Princes, and looke to your Crownes; especially you petty ones in *Germany*, that are but fatted to be swallowed one after another, as his stomack can digest, or your turne comes to be served vp. You see it is safer being his seruant, than the sonne of any Potentate besides. Therefore strue for place and preferment there, and helpe with all the speed yee may, to betray one another to ruine. You that are *Protestants* or *Lutherans*, it is no matter for Religion; hold some the stirrop, and let others lift *Spaine* into the saddle, to ride one another like Poste-horses by turnes. You see how honourably he deales with that Prince, whose peaceable parents made him easie entrance; and how fauourably with the *Palatinate*, whom he rides in bloud, and spur-galls on both sides, whilst you stand laughing on, and see not that your day is comming.

Thus I thought, and thought withall to be silent, and to keep these papers from flying abroad, for feare of hauing my owne wings clipt. But when I saw in defect of greater, God had raised vp petty Princes to defend the Faith, and put that spirit into the Prince of *Orange*, the Count *Mansfelt*, and the Duke of *Brunswicke*, which he had taken from *Saxonia* and *Bavaria*, and others, it made me resume courage, beholding the immediate hand of God in this worke, and to thinke, surely God will haue all the glory to himselfe, that he imployes such instruments, whose estates, in comparison, are but drops to the *Spanish* Ocean: I will not therefore be guilty of so much cowardise, as to reserue my selfe, where these men fight, and seeme prodigall of their owne liues;

or at least, not of so much dishonestie, as to conceale

what God hath sent into my hands, perhaps

to publish for the generall informa-

tion and benefit of all

Christendome.

Goe out therefore, and prosper in

Gods name.







# THE NEW-FOWN D POLITCKE.

---

## THE THIRD PART.

---

### CHAP. I.

*After an exquisite Examination and triall made of those Wits, which ought to have the charge of Prouinciall Gouvernments, a ranke of Gouvernors are published in Parnassus, and wholesome anisoes for all Gouvernors, Iudges, and under-Officers of State.*



After a long time spent in expectation, yesterday, finally to the satisfaction of all men, the Distribution of this States government was published. It is not possible to beloeue the diligence and exquisite circumspections, which were taken by his *Majestie* and his Ministers in the choise of those be-  
 Y 2 ing

ing exact and worthy of so great a businesse. For first, they tooke into their consideration to make choise of ancient men, experimented in State affaires, onely to the end, that Colts should not be put to be tamed by knauish horse-breakers; and it is worth the obseruation, that in so great a number of concurrents for places, they had elected persons of a slow Genius, of cold constitutions, and in their actions perplex, irresolute, and addicted to drowsinesse, euen almost to disability: and on the contrary, that they had excluded those which for the quicknesse and viuacity of their wits, appeared to be far fitter, and more worthy of employments than others. And it is thought the reason was, because that wise men, which are promoted to businesse of examinations and trialls of wits doe firmly belecue, that those wits which are ouer liuely, nimble, & fiery, proue very vnapt to rule others, hauing great need themselves of a curbing-bit, and a head-straine to saue them from falling downe headlong into ditches; it being also manifest by long experience, that these by their foole hardy, and ouer-resolute spirits, doe sooner disquiet people than become good instruments to maintaine them in that sweet peace and correspondent satisfaction, which indeed ought to be the principall care of all those which should be admitted to mannage the affaires of provinciall Governments. And it is apparant to all men, how those Princes Electors hold it for an irrefragable maxime, that, Hee makes a happier progresse with very good successe, who being of a slower genius, of a soft spirit, knowes best to accomodate his passions to stand as still as a Signe at a Tauerne; because the world, which requires good gouernment, turnes quickly seditious and imbroyled with the phantasticall *Gymnaes* of certaine hotspurres, which in all their affaires by seeking to become ouerwise in their owne conceit, they doe instead of quenching and appeasing troubles and combustions, kindle them the more by vnseasonable remedies. *In tempestiuo remedio debet accendunt.*

Fifteene daies since, by a most rigorous Triall, which was made for so great a businesse; not the ignorant (as many thought)



thought; but those envious Projectours were excluded, whose pates being full of groeths and new inventions, are enemies to those ancient customes and ingenuous orders, whereto people haue beene enured as another nature, yet these subtle heads would better them with moderne and new lawes. Tis true, they greatly laboured to finde out pliable subiects of a milde and flexible disposition, which knew to apply their owne nature to another bodies nature conformable, as wiues ought to be to their husbands. Nor did they admit at any hand an Officer, which had not studied for the space of foure years continually, that most important point of Philosophy, to liue as not to liue: The very Basis and ground-werke, whereon the quietnesse of people securely consisted; and the safety also of that good government, which might be hoped at the hands of an honest wise Gouvernour, in whom they did not so much regard his insight and knowledge in the Lawes and Statutes, as that he should be well seene in that prudent mystery, in that mild manner of proceeding, and in that dexterity of vnderstanding, as is not as yet found registred in Bookes. A consideration so necessary, that some great Lawyers, which haue had the charge of Prouinces, lighted vpon most simple successe, as that lanthorne of the Lawes *Bartolus* can beare testimony, who was forced to leape out of a window at the Palae of *Todi*, for all his rare iudgement and skill in the Lawes, because he would not be taken and torne in pieces by some that could no longer brooke the impertinent curiosities of one that was so wise of his tongue, and so imprudent in his braine. Likewise this is certaine, that they reiected, euen with the ballinado, those great Beasts, which with open ostentation, so Peacocks-wise vsed to looke big with austere & terrible countenance, taking delight to threaten his Maiesties Subiects, made by the Creatour of the same mould as themselves, more like tyrants, than ciuill Iudges, which many of them counterfeited for some other sinister respect, and aboue all things they had a care to exclude those tyrannicall Butchers, who *Buſyrus* like, being bent to shed

## 166 *The New-found Politicke.*

humane blood, would make men beleue, that they went about to set the crooked World right againe with Pillories, with Gibbers, or at least with stupendious fines and mulcts worse than a Thunder-bolt, such as were neuer imposed in more ancient times. About measure they loued those Iudges which tooke more care to hinder misdemeanours, than to punish them, and which neuer subscribe to the sentence of Death, the Greeke letter  $\Theta$ , without the Inke of Teares.

The next day after, all the Presidents and Iudges appeared before *Apollo*, who caused *Salust Crispus*, chiefe Notary of the Collaterals, to minister the oath vnto them, which was, That they should faithfully leaue the world as they found it, and not alter any of the ancient Priuiledges.

After the Oath thus ministred, the said *Salust* tooke aside the Gouvernour of *Libethrum*, a Favourite of his, and gaue him these admonitions. First, to begin his Gouvernement with a kinde of carelesnesse, and to continue it with diligence by degrees, entring in as a Lambe, and playing the Lyon towards the end, but alwaies generously inclined, remembring that Principle of *Cornelius Tacitus*, *Acribus initis incurioso fine*.

Secondly, that in all causes betweene the Common people he should doe most exact Iustice without exception of persons: but in suits arising among the Nobler sort hee should mingle with the rigour of Iustice the dexterity of a wary iudgement, remembring alwayes, that the accusations of great persons were so odious to Princes that they laid vpon Officers Gownes an aspersiō, like the tainting spots of corrupted Oile which could neuer bee washed away with the purest sope of innocence. Therefore among these great spirited men, a Iudge had need with the sword of Iustice, to imploy like a wise Fencer, the target of a nimble wit and a cautelous care, that neither of the one side nor of the other, he be exclaimes vpon for any distasteful order. For Princes hauing cause to vse their helpe for counsell, force, or purses, they desire to hold them well satisfied.

And

And therefore in controuersies falling out among them, a Iudge had need to learne some easie way to draw out rotten teeth, and with the hand of dexterity to fill vp the place with the finest Cotten wooll.

Thirdly, a Iudge must enforce himselfe to know all things, but not to execute al which he knowes. *Omnia scire non omnia exequi*. For to attempt needlesse and brabling matters, were to goe about to set straight the leg of a Dog, or to lose his braine in the Alchymie of Fooles. And in this corrupt Age it is good counsel for an Officer to tolerate in people some stale disorder, then with any ill satisfaction to the generalitie to torment himselfe to seeke to bring in that, which he cannot execute without commotions and heart-burnings.

Fourthly, that with other Iudges and officers subiect to the same Prince, he should not conrend nor contest for matter of preheminence or right, nor looke to be his owne Caruer, or to right himselfe in his Court by vsing any strict course with inferiour officers for matters of prerogatiue of Courts, but either to acquaint the Prince himselfe, or to winke at the affront, if another Court seemes to iustifie the subiect, or els to take in hand the weapons of a gowned man, the pen. But if the Iudges authoritie stretch to the Confines of another Prince, hee must not seeke differences, nor auoid them. But if they proceed from Souldiers or Pyrats, he must defend his Borders and Iurisdiction with Armes. Yet so, that towards all Princes subiects in league and amitie with his Prince, he behaue himselfe as temperately regardfull, as zealously affected to his owne Princes honour.

Fifthly, that in some occasions he preferre the publicke peace of his gouernment before that strictnesse of Iustice, which is mentioned in Bookes.

Sixtly, that for any impertinent thing, which hee sees or heares, which be not extraordinarily altered in mind or countenance; and that if he cannot doe this, yet that he refrain himselfe from speaking of it, and in any case to beware that he deliberate not, nor study for reuenge or reformation in heat or anger, but in cold blood after a long times delay.

Seuenthly,



## 168 *The New-found Politicke.*

Seuenthly, that in supreme and waighy matters hee take heed of making any shew of vndaunted, of a fiery, and resolved mind, but rather that he content himselfe to hunt Waspes and Hornets out of their holes, with the hand of the Prince armed with the gauntlet of a higher authority; for although an Officer findes that he hath ability and power enough to execute a greater enterprize, yet for feare of emulation in Court, or some casuall blocke in his way, which the wisest man could not foresee, oftentimes it is not expedient to put in execution all that which his authority might warrant him.

Eightly, that he deale in all ordinary matters concerning ordinary men, entering into strict friendship with no man residing within the precincts of his command, but to beware of that wresting and wiredrawing occasions, which might reach vnto the hatred and hindrance of another, and to auoid domesticall familiaritie, which causeth contempt. Onely let him vse that decent grauity which may procure respect and an awfull loue. But in any case, that he shunne the conuersation of base and riotous persons, and that he keepe company for the most with men of his owne ranke, yet so, that he make not any man so endeared and so bosome a friend vnto him, who might afterwards by prying into his dealings, and diuing into his secrets, turne to be his capitall enemy. For sometimes contemptible persons, not suspected for craft, may in the twinkling of an eye, of low and earth-creeeping mushrooms, become tall Cedars at least in their owne ouerweening conceit.

Ninthly, that he force his noble nature to endure the stinking pride of Lawyers, although most odious to God and all good men, and to beare with their impertinent discourses, and wrangling bawling, who take vpon them to become Lambes at home and Lyons abroad, onely to maintaine the glory and reputation of the Bench, but commonly it is to fill their owne purses with the ruines and spoyles of honest men than themselves. Wherein I wish him to remember that golden saying of *Tacitus*, that it is a most profitable, as al-

so most pithy in the choise and free will of Good and Euill things to consider, what thou thy selfe wouldest or wouldest not endure vnder another Gouvernour or Iudges power, *Vilissimus idem, ac iracundissimus bonarum malarumq; rerum delectus, cogitare, quid volueris sub alio Principe, aut nolueris.*

Tenth, that he take heed with great circumspection he fall not into the other extremity in seeking to auoid the defect of his predecessor, as a certaine Prince very heedlessly did, who perceiuing that wise men found fault with the late Prince for too much lenity, turned an odious Tyrant. The golden Meane is euer best.

Eleuenth, that with extraordinary seuerity he take more care to bridle the disorders of his own house, then the seditions of the common people; for the immodest and vnciuill carriage of a Magistrates domesticke gentlemen, whom some call Countrey-Courtiers, is a farre greater blemish and scandall to their Master, then the brutish insolence of rude Clownes and ill-bred Swaines.

Twelth, that he hate, as the horror of Hell, all kind of fore-stalling and engrossing of commodities, and that he account as the Capitall enemy of his reputation such detestable gaines. But specially, that diuelish gaine, which is in these dayes much practised, and one of the chiefe causes of our Creators anger towards many States, by the sale of Offices. A most perillous Charybdis, a rocke so dangerous in the Sea of worldly businesse, that Iustice being fled backe into Heauen, these petty Chapmen, who neuer dreame of another world but this earthly one, turne all things topsie turuy to make themselues sauers for their dear-bought places. Whereas a noble spirit should firmly belecue, that the Merchandise of a Christian is ingenuous simplicity and plain dealing, and being honestly called to beare office in his countrey, then his richest lucre worthy of an honourable Officer is to ingulfe himselfe in the Trade of honour and vprightnesse of Iustice, which being by the trumpet of Fame blowne into his Princes eares in a short time, God inspiring the heart of the Prince, he shall be preferred from Office to Office, vntill hee

## 170 *The New-found Politicke.*

arrive to a contented fortune correspondent to his Heroicall worth and magnanimous minde.

Thirteenth, that perpetually he haue his eyes fixt on his vnder-Iudges hands, and that he looke as narrowly to them, as if he held a biting serpent in his owne hand, that iniustice being a very dangerous member which hazards his credit by the Diuels temptations to blurre his masters honour by playing the base Mechanicke in the sacred seat of Iustice. And because no Iudge receiues bribes but sinisterly by his wife, seruant, or without witnesse, sauing the party himselfe, his supreme Iudge or Prince ought to proclaime rewards to the discouersers, and vpon the least euidence to remoue such theeues of the Deity; seeing that Iustice is one of the prime Diuine Attributes.

Fourteenth, that he accommodate his Genius & Nature to the nature of his prouincials, shewing himselfe mild to the peaceable, and seuerer to the seditious. And to take speciall care to weed out idle persons; if they refuse conuenient labor, which he ought to see them put vnto; and if any Drones be found with honey, to examine them from whose hiue they stole the same.

Fifteenth, that to the end his Prince may conceiue well of his worth, he acquaint not his highnesse with slight occurrences, nor trifling matters, which fall out in his gouernment. Nor yet must he restraîne to certifie vnto him all the most important affaires, chiefly, all proiects tending to his honour or profit.

Sixteenth, that he belecue how the penalties and punishments in the power of a wary Iudge, consists more in threats then in inflicting of them, & that he neuer forget this lesson: How Officers gouerne men full of a thousand imperfections, subiect to infinite errors, how they are not Angells of Heauen which cannot sinne; and therefore in his gouernment hee affects more the report of a sweet natured Iudge, like his Creatour, who bearing with our trespasses, *Si quoties peccant homines, toties sua fulmina mittat*, and not the repute of a tyrannizing Minister.

Seuenteenth



Seuenteenth, that he frequent not Reuels, Dances, or any publike Feasts, mournfull spectacles, and tragicall in the end to wise Officers, as instruments, which vilifie his fame, and bring his personall presence into contempt among the vulgar, and might bring his grauitie into question among his equals.

Eighteenth, that he know how the shamefull acts of the Nobles and principall Gentlemen doe waxe more cruell against them, which debase themselues to commit them, without touching or blemishing the generall reputes of their honourable families.

Ninteenth, that he held it for a thing certaine, that it is better to dissemble and winke at some common infirmities and frailties, then to shew himselfe earnest to punish them, it not being the resolution of a wary man to enter into that naughty passage, out of the which he otherwise knowes, that the horse cannot draw forth his feet.

Twentieth, that he vary not in opinion with his equals in office or vnder Officers, but vpon extremitie, knowing that his Prince had rather he should vse dexteritie and nimbleness of wit in such actions, then rigorous Iustice.

Twenty one, that with a pleasing sagacity he let the world see, how he had found all such as inhabite in his iurisdiction rather good people, then by any rigorous proceedings of his that he made them good, because whosoever glories and vaunts that he hath hanged and punished so many malefactors during the time of his office, he triumphs in their infamy and shame, which cannot redound to his honour, nor to that discreet earriage, which is required in a well foreseene Gouvernour.

CHAP. 2.

*The most Illustrious Monarchies resident at Parnassus, demand by what meanes the Venetian Lady got such exact obedience and exquisite secrecie of her Nobility, whereof shee giues them couenient satisfaction.*

---

**T**HE Monarchies of Great Britaine, France, Spaine and Polonia, wondring that the Venetians had gotten the start and fame for their gift of Secrecie, and that the Spanish Monarchy could by no cunning intelligences, nor rich pensions corrupt any of their Parliament house, called the *Pregadi*, neuer as yet to disclose any of their priuy coucel, they went with one consent to the Palace of the Venetian Lady, earnestly importuning her to discover vnto them by what meanes or pollicie of State she had arriued to that happinesse, as to obaine such Secrecie and rare Obedience in so many mouthes and hearts, which they could scarce meet withall in one or two of their trustiest seruants. To this the Lady answered, that she had allured and wonne her Nobility to this vertue of Secrecie, with rewards and hopes of promotion, and for the crime of disobedience she scared them with punishment.

To which the aboue-named Monarchies replied, that they also wrought and vsed the same meanes, but could neuer as yet obaine that wonderfull effect and rare end. Then said the Lady that hapned, because in comparison of those rewards, which are conferred vpon well-deseruing persons in a Common-wealth rightly ordered, the rewards of Monarchies were poore, and punishments more sparing. Where-

to the *Monarchies* made answer, that with them it was cleane contrary, and that the rewards of *Free-States*, to bee paraleld with the wastfull liberalitie, which great *Kings* extended towards their Ministers, was but beggery. For they neuer heard, the *Venetians* had beene so liberall as to recompence any of their *Senators* seruice and fidelity with preferring them to be owners of Cities, Townes, Castles, Licutenantships, or Lands in Fee, as *Kings* haue diuers times aduanced their Subiects vnto: And that the greatest reward, which the *Venetians* accustomed to bestow at any time vpon their *Senators*, was to prefer them to some *Offices*, which they were forced to labour hard for, and to passe many base and inferiour *Offices* by degrees and steps, euen from their youth vp, before they could arriue to any supreme place of command or profit. Besides that, the most part of their *Offices* were rather hindrances than gainfull: onely they caried a colour of some reputation to them that knew no better, nor saw the glory and pomps of *Monarchies*.

And for punishments, without any comparisons, those were far more terrible and cruell, which proceeded from the resolu'd will of a *Prince* incens'd for some grieuous cause, than the punishments of the *Venetian Senate* against any of their *Senators*, which ordinarily were more slow and warie, than sudden and quicke. And that there was a great difference in proportion betweene a *Prince*, which iudged his vnsall, and a *Senator* which by his suffrage and voice punished his equall, his friend, and kinsman: That the *Venetians* knew not but banishment, and one kind of cruell punishment, called, *Il tremendo Canal Orfano*, to sowe vp their Traitors in a Sack, and to drowne them in their Lake, which they seldome doe but in desperate cases: Whereas in *Monarchies*, the Iudges sentenced some to be hang'd, drawne, and quartered, some to be burnt, some to be rackt and tortured, a thing common in *Spaine*, practis'd vnder pretext of heresie towards other *Princes* subiects; and if any of their *Nobilitie* were condemned for high Treason, they escaped not the axe, the kindest fauour *England* affords to offenders,



## 174 *The New-found Politicke.*

sauing one only example in the *Chronicles*, of *Queene Anne Bullen*, for her greater grace and her iur was beheaded with the sword of *Calice*.

At these speeches the *Venetian Dame* smiled, and said, that in stead of those rewards of *Honour and Estates in Fee*, which *Monarchs* bestowed vpon their well-deseruing *Creatures*, shee also requited her best and wisest *Nobles* with places of great authority and command, with most absolute power and dominion; One with the *Noble Kingdome of Creet or Candy*; others with *Corsu*, and other *Ilands* subiect to her *State*: Some shee preferred to be her *Viceroyes* in *Dalmatia* and *Istria*; some shee appointed *Gouernours* of her neighbouring *Territories* on the *Continent*, of *Nova Palma*, *Forum Inlij*, *Harca Trevisano*, *Padua*, *Vincenza*, *Verona*, *Brescia*, *Bergamo*, *Crema* on the *Frontiers* of *Milan*, and the rest of her *Nobilitie* shee reserued perhaps to their far greater contentment in the *Senate-house* at home in *Venice*, which might be termed the *Maiesticall Miracle of Cities*. So that her *Nobles* might better be called *Kings and great Princes*, than priuate *Gentlemen* or *Subiects*, who in all affaires of moment, hauing euery one a speciall interest, must needs be faithfull to their owne selues; whereas the seruants of *Princes* were faithfull vnto them not as sons but as vassals. And the feare, which frights our *Nobles* of *Venice* from selling the *Secrets of the State*, to forraigne *Princes* ariseth from this infinite disparity and disproportion, that is betwixt that which is lost with treachery, and that which is gained with fidelitie; betwixt that remorse of conscience, which a *Subiect* feelles for betraying his *Prince*, and the feare which a *Senator* is possessed with for prouing disloyall to a *Free-State*. There is great difference in the loue of a *Free-borne Senator*, and the loue of a cringing vassall, howsoeuer he be gilded with the bare title of a *Nobleman*. What will it then boot one of our *Senators* to bewray the secrets of our *State* to his owne hindrance and perpetuall dishonour? Finally, the *Venetian Dame* told them, that the rewards which *Princes* conferred vpon their *Counsellors* and *Secretaries*,

*Secretaries*, occasioned oftentimes pernicious effects cleane contrary to their *Masters* meaning which trusted them; because those *rewards* so giuen not onely cooled them in their good seruice, specially at that time, when they had no more, than they might hope for of him for their cares and paines: but the good will of the *Prince* being commonly mutable, and subiect to change and nouelty, the treacherous machinations and emulations of some *Courtiers* being frequent and rise, it sometimes falls out that the *Ministers* to assure themselves of their places and high commands, which they purchased by their honourable deserts, or perhaps by the helpe of their purses, or by other meanes, suspecting a remouall from their *Offices*, or some disasters by their aduersaries, they proue vnderhand false, and to make vp their market, or perhaps to make themselves sauers; if they bought their places, they sell their *Princes* secrets, and may be afterwards tempted to doe him a worse mischief. But such is the ardent affection, which kindles in the hearts of all our *Venetian Nobles*, that they will hazard to liue with poverty, shame, and disdain at home, than to be hired abroad by strange *Princes*, or to betray their native Country by reuealing any secrets which might redound to the common hindrance: so that I may rightly liken a *Nobleman of Venice* to a *Fish*, which being bred in that *Lake* in the water of liberty, knowes not how to liue abroad out of *Venice* in the element of seruitude.

The

## CHAP. 3.

*The Romane Monarchy demanding of Cornelius Tacitus the resolution of a Politicall Question, receives full satisfaction of the Shepherd Melibœus, who casually was there present.*

**T**HE ancient Romane Monarchy euer since shee was tranſackt by the Gothes, Vandalls, and other Northerne Barbarians, liued neere this Court vnder colour of going a hunting continually diſguiſed for the ſame purpoſe the other day repaired to *Cornelius Tacitus*, who for his recreation had retired himſelfe out of *Parnaffus* into the Country. To whom ſhee ſaid, that ſhe came vnto him purpoſely to be reſolued of one maine doubt, which troubled her minde continually, the which ſhe had imparted to many Politicians, but could neuer as yet be ſatisfied by any of them, and therefore ſhe repaired to him, as to the prime and grand Statesman of all others. The matter which thus perplexed her was to know why the Kingdomes of Greece, Asia, Egypt, France, Britaine, Spaine, and the Common-wealth of Carthage, with many other great Prouinces, before they became united to the State of Rome, were of themſelues powerfull enough and formidable, but being ſithence ſubiected and united together in her proper perſon, they miſſed with all their forces to make her ſtrong and durable. To this *Cornelius Tacitus* answered, that this was a difficult Question, and could not ſuddenly be reſolued, but the next day after ſome pauſe and ſtudie he would returne thither with his beſt reſolution,



lusion. The *Monarchesse* rested very well satisfied, and as shee was ready to licence his departure, *Melibæus* that famous Shepherd recorded by the *Poets*, who that morning had brought to *Tacitus* a present of fresh cheese and cream, and a couple of dainty cheeses, and stood all the while attentively listning to this *Question*, seeing them now ready to take their leaue, he interrupted them, desiring *Tacitus* not to depart, for he would instantly without any study giue the *Lady* sufficient satisfaction. The *Lady* and *Tacitus* laughed very heartily, and bade him not to beat his braine about such deepe matters, but to goe home and looke to his sheepe. *Melibæus* replied very earnestly, that no Race among mortall men could better discourse of true and solid *Statebusinessse* than *Shepherds*; and that *Princes* should be most happy, if in gouerning their *Subiects*, they could imitate *Shepherds* in charity: And so should the people bee, if they could obey their *Prince*, as sheepe did their shepherd.

The *Monarchesse* and *Tacitus* confounded with maruell at the sudden and extemporary words of the *Shepherd*, willed him freely to vtter his resolution. Whereupon *Melibæus* began in this manner: Most mighty *Princesse*, I am (as my *Virgil* well knowes) his *Mantuan Shepherd*, and it were a great shame to these silver haire, which you see on my head and chin, if I were not exactly experienced in my owne occupation; I say then, that in so many yeares which I haue spent in gouerning sheepe, I haue gotten this knowledge, that the greatnesse and power of a *Shepherd* doth not consist (as many ambitious and conetous men beleue) in possessing of thousands of sheepe, but that he be owner of so many sheepe onely, as a good *Shepherd* can watch with his eye, gouerne with his rod, and rule with his whistle. And the reason is cleare, for in too small a number of sheepe we see *Shepherds* poore, because their great pouerty compels them with too much seuerity to milk their flock, and too often to sheare them. In a moderate and meane number, where the true *perfection* lies, *Shepherds* become alwaies wealthy

## 178 *The New-found Politicke.*

and happy; whereas in the excesse and over-abounding number of sheepe, by reason of the difficult and hard means to governe them, being thus from the golden rule of proportion so far remote, and indeed beyond the power of one man, they cannot chuse but incur manifest danger. Whence it comes to passe, that the miserable sheepe of his flock being too many in number, by the couctoulnesse and carelesnesse of him, that vndertakes to governe them, doe pine away at first, and at last they dye of meere necessitie and want. How is it possible, but that confusion should happen, where multitudes abound out of the *Owners* view and reaches: For it is the *Masters owne eye*, which fattens and makes his flocke to thrive. Right happy were many great *Potentates* and *States*, if our *Creator* had bestowed on them the proprietie of *Camells* to bow and kneele downe to the ground for the receiuing of the burthen of *Governments*, and had the discreet moderation to set meeres and bounds vnto their ambitious minds by rising and standing vp (as is the manner of those *beasts*) when they feelee themselves reasonably well laden; and to receiue no heavier charge on their shoulders, though stronger than *Atlas*, at such time as they know themselves sufficiently charged with *states* proportioned according to their abilities in true wisdom and prudence.

There are past now 1626. yeares, since I became a *Shepherd* in *Arcadia*, and euer since my comming and being here, I haue contented my selfe with *five hundred sheepe* in my flocke, which haue yearly yeilded mee *five hundred Crownes*, which is more than sufficient for my owne maintenance, and my families. And this most fortunate gaine is so sure vnto me, that I am respected of all men in *Arcadia*, and reputed for the best *Shepherd* in all the Country. Yea, the wisest in *Parnassus* doe hold me to be a happier man than *Alexander the Great*, who was not ashamed to wish for more worlds to conquer. That *Shepherd*, whose ambition prouokes him to keep many flocks in hope of gaine is much deceiued, for where his owne eye cannot ouersee, he must needs commit the charge of them to others, commonly, to

*Louis,*

*Louts, Knaues, Theeves, and Villaines*, who as people borne altogether for their bellies, and other carnall and worldly pleasures, will not only sheare but slay their *Masters flocks*. Besides, who knowes not whether he must sometime or other vndergoe a greater charge than all his *Flocks* amount vnto in warlike prouisions and garrisons to defend them from Pirates and wilde Tartars, or from his malicious neighbours?

For example, I will instance in my neighbour *Menalcas*, who being my capitall enemy, and bearing great enuy and emulation in seeing me prosper with my five hundred sheep about him and others, and verily beleening, that he should supplant me, if he could enioy more flocks than I kept, not content with the like number of sheepe as he formerly possessed equall vnto mee, but thinking to make himselfe absolute *Monarch* of all other Pastors in *Arcadia*, he tooke vp money at vse, and at the extremest interest, sold the greatest part of his Patrimonie, and having got together a large masse of money, sent into *England, Spaine*, and to strange Countries, where he vnderstood the fairest wolled sheep were, and with excessiue cost transported them hither, and made three seuerall flocks of five hundred in each focke. But it fortun'd so, that those sheepe being forraine, and not acquainted with the language and whistles of our Shepheards, nor with our kinde of pasture, they stragled here and there into vnkowne places. Whereupon *Menalcas* was forced to substitute Deputy Shepheards and many Dogs to looke vnto them and to fetch them in. But such was the naturall hatred of the sheepe towards the Dogs, and the implacable moodinesse which they conceiued to be continually hurried vp and downe, that they fell into an inward conceit of languor and despaire, and so into flat disobedience to abhorre both their Shepheards and the Dogs, insomuch that when they were to bee milke and shorne, they hid themselves in woods and deserts. And then it was known throughout all *Arcadia* that *Despaire and strange vsage can turne Conies into Lions*. Yea, it was found,



## 180 *The New-found Politicke.*

that at that time the *Spanish* sheepe, which *Menalcas* had brought thither, proued so rauing mad, that they attempted to bite their Shepheards. *Menalcas* thus perplexed for the losse and escape of so many sheepe, hired out of *Spaine* and *Switzerland*, the valiantest Dogs hee could haue for money, which considering the infinite charge he sustained in conducting them into *Arcadia*, and the nature of these Dogs being continually accustomed to hunt these sheepe, they came at last, what for want of their due allowance, and what of a wanton and greedy disposition, they turned like Wolves, and preyed so long vpon these silly sheepe, that the rest which were left aliue pined away with griefe, rather to endure such continual hurrying and troubles vnder *strange Pastors* and *rauenous Dogs*.

Poore *Menalcas* vpon the report of this tragicall euent became the by-word and subiect of laughter to all *Arcadia* for this his ambitious enterprise; and was pointed at with the more fingers, euen of very boyes, when afterwards he was faine to turne a petty merchant of skins, the vnlucky relicks of a lamentable charge, and the presaging tokens of his owne Funerals; for indeed the mans heart-strings brake of very sorrow and melancholy, leauing his house, that sometimes flourished among the best of vs in *Arcadia*, now desolate and most miserable.

---

CHAR.

---

## C H A P. 4.

*Many people hauing wasted their meanes by gluttonous feasts, prodigall fare, and pompous appa-  
rell, for the moderating of such lauish expences  
doe desire a Statute of their Princes, but they  
misse of their purpose.*

**S**OME Nations subiects to certaine Princes which are resident here at *Parnassus*, hauing tryed, that superfluity of belly-cheere, excesse of drinking, and the vanities of apparell and new-fangled fashions, are now a dayes besides the wrath of their Creatour iustly incurred for the breach of these vowes, which were vnderaken for them at their Baptisme, many men were transformed into Swinish qualities, to their healths impaire, the ruine of their estates, and soules danger. And for their outside, they garnished themselues like peacocks, so gay and trimme, that no patrimony how rich soeuer, can now supply the ambition of men, nor the vanities of women; & that they also obseruing in these proud times, how this excesse proceeds yet further, that all the portion which is left vnto young Gentlewomen, whom ciuill modesty heretofore was wont to be their chiefest ornament, how great soeuer the same might be, did not now suffice to buy them *Carkanets* and *Jewels*, and imbroidered *petticoates*, so that Fathers are not able to marry them according to their rancke, and to match them with thrifty persons were almost impossible, for hauing knowne them for such vaine creatures, they will not be troubled with their company, and to let them runne headlong according to their vnbridled fancies, they must either marry with vnthrifs, like

themselves, or live vnmarried, to the hazard of their chastities: so that except some Law be enacted for the curbing of this exceſſe, they may well be ſaid to hold the Wolfe by the eares.

Vpon theſe conſiderations, fearing their vtter ouerthrow, with one conſent they preſented their ſupplikations to their Princes, who ſeemed very glad to entertaine their motion ſo much tending to the publike good, and like good Politicians knowing how profitable it is to ſtrike the iron while it is hot, & at that time to publiſh a Law, when the ſubjects themſelves become ſutors for it, muſt needs fall out very luckily, & with good fruit in the effect, they out of hād, while their ſubjects were in this humour of thrift, ioyned together to cut off all ſuperfluous cuſtomes in feaſts and drinkings, and all new faſhions of attires, tying themſelves to one faſhion onely, not to be altered for many yeares, allowing what is decent and comely to euery ſeueral vocation.

But the Euening before this moſt laudable Statute was to be ſigned and publiſhed, accidentally it came to the eares of the Princes, Farmers, and Officers of the Cuſtomes and Impoſts, who being likewiſe backt and whetted on by the Merchers, Vintners, Grocers and other Tradersmen which liued vpon the ſpoile of the richer ſort, they repaired in all haſte to their Princes, and very cunningly intreated to defaulte and abate a great part of thoſe yearely ſummes which they were to pay them for ſuch Wines, Spice, Sugars, and ſuch other forraine commodities, as by way of Cuſtomes and Impoſts, they were to receiue to their uſe. The Princes ſtood confounded in their iudgement, hearing ſpeech of ſo great loſſes and defalcments, as they very craftily inſinuated and pretended in Foxes habits to be moſt true, and although moſt of the ſtuffes were wrought in their owne Countries, at leaſt the moſt durable and beſt beſitting euery Nation, yet they made their Princes belecue, that there came from *Naples*, from *Genoa*, from *Millan*, and from *Spaine*, ſo many kinds of ſtuffes, ſilkes, gold and ſiluer lace, which if the Statute of thrift went currant, they could not but ſuſtaine exceeding great loſſes in  
the



the publike Customes; whereupon the Princes sent for the Committies and Deputies of their People, and told them what their Customers had proued before them on their honest words, so that they could not hinder their owne interest and profite, lest they should make themselues leane in going about to fatten them. With this answer saououring of the Princes gaine, the people departed much grieved and afflicted, and confessed all of them, that to heale any disorders with that medicine which might offend the publike Customes and Imposts were desperate Cure, and incurable Cankers.

CHAP. 5.

*Terence the Comedian being imprisoned by Iason the Pretour of Urbine, for keeping a Concubine, is deliuered by Apollo with very great dishonour to the Pretour.*

**P***Velius Terentius* liued in a little house, but very well furnished, in the Comicall quarter, with no more meniall seruants about him, then *Bacchis* his maid & *Davus* his ancient attendant. And although *Bacchis* in the floure of her age, being then a very beautifull creature, had bin graced with her Masters bed, yet now being aged, she continued in his house without scandall, and very modestly disposed, not ministring the least cause of murmuring or dislike to any of the neighbourhood. But it happened about tenne dayes since, that *Iason* the great Lawyer being Pretour of Urbine, to get him some repute in his new Office, directed a Procees vnder a penaltie to *Terence*, commanding him in his Majestyes name, all excuses laid aside, immediately to put *Bacchis* out of his house, vnlisse he would incurre the danger of

## 184 *The New-found Politicke.*

a Concubine-keeper. But *Terence* did not onely disobey the contents of the *Mandate*, but other Writs of *Iasons* court. Whereupon the Pretour forbare to send any more warrants of orders and injunctions; and yesterday without any more adoe caused *Terence* to be apprehended and imprisoned; but with so great displeasure to *Apollo*, that in an extraordinary great chafe he publickly exclaimed, that by his officers, yea and that in *Parnassus*, men more malicious then ignorant, that wicked abuse of being quick-sighted in apparence and shew, but blind in matters of substance was lately introduced and practised to the dishonour of his Court. Then commanding *Terence* to be discharged out of prison, he caused *Iason* himselfe, for all his famous Bookes of the Law to be there shut vp in his stead, and also to his greater affliction, appointed *Philip Decius* his Aduersary, to be Pretour in his roome. Whereupon yesterday the Rod and the Standard, being the *Pretorian Ensignes*, were deliuered to *Decius*, who going to *Apolloes* presence his Maiestie spake these words vnto him: By the correction inflicted on *Iason*, learne to know that Reuerend Iudges, which in the administration of Iustice, doe more attend the true and reall seruice of God, than by formall trickes and gibes to play vpon their Inferiours, they ought first to hunt out of his owne house malice and bribery, and then to chase out of other mens houses young harlots, as *Tham*, before hee proceeded to expell an aged *Bacchis*.

---

CHAP.

---

CHAP. 6.

**D**omitius Corbulo for certaine words spoken by him during the time of his government, which sauoured of Tyranny, is called in question by the Criminall Magistrates, but in the end to his greater glory dismissed.

**B**ecause the Citie of *Pirrhia*, and all that most populous Territory by the mildnesse and ouermuch lenity of certaine Gouvernours, became more insolent then in former times, and full of Malefactours and perillous Factions, which disturbed the peace of the vertuous, *Apollonius* Maiestie, to bridle with some exemplary punishment, the licentiousnesse of his seditious subiects, about two moneths past sent into that government, the rigorous *Domitius Corbulo*, who in few dayes did so demean himselfe, that from a seditious State, he reduced the same to a peaceable course of liuing. Within a while after, it chanced, that *Corbulo* discoursing with some of his familiar friends, enquired of them, what conceit they had of him: they freely answered him, that the rigor and seuerity which he had lately vsed against many of the seditious, had terrified the whole Citie and Countrey, that all did hate him. At which answer, *Corbulo* reioyced beyond measure, and told them againe: *There's no matter, Oderint dum metuant*; let them hate, so they stand in feare of me. The which words were afterwards carried by some pick-thanks to *Apollonius*, who taking in ill part the accusation, referred the same to his Court of criminall causes. And because, by an ancient Decree published by his Maiestie, it was knowne and declared, that whatsoeuer Prince legitimate, naturall, and



hereditary, presumed to utter such arrogant and rash words, he should incurre this penalty, to be reputed a Tyrant, and if any Officer should let slip, though unawares, and by chance, any such dangerous words out of his mouth, he should be capitally punished. Corbulo was summoned to appeare vpon this Information before the Iudges, who according, came the next day to answer with all humility; where the case was throughly canuased, and while all men expected to heare some rigorous order to be taken with Corbulo, by extraordinary fauour the cause was removed by a *Certiorari* before Apollo himselfe, where to all mens admiration he was pronounced cleare and guiltlesse, and remaunded backe into his gouernment with far greater authority and grace then before. The sentence contained, that in a Prince which had the Honey of Grace in his power, those words were shamefull, and expressely Tyrannicall; most honourable in that Officers mouth, which had nothing in his hands but the odious sting of Iustice: that Prince being miraculous indeed, which causeth himselfe to be beloned and reuerenced of his people, and that Officer most sufficient which hath the Genius and nature, to make himselfe to be feared and obeyed.

### CHAP. 7.

By the promotion of Diogenes the Cynick, vnto a higher place, the honourable chaire of the Tranquillitie of a private life being vacant, Apollo preferres the famous Philosopher Crates to that charge, who refuseth it.

**D**iogenes the Cynicke, who for so many yeares with much fruit to the vniuersall good, and his owne infinit glory in particular had vndergone the charge of commending

mending in the Chaire of the publike Schooles Pouerty, Solitarinesse, and that contented quietnesse of mind, by whose perswasion *Attalus* himselfe the King of Treasure became of that admirable resolution to put away his riches, the easier to embrace the austere Sect of the *Stoikes*, which is much edified now in *Parnassus*, about two moneths past he was promoted for his singular great merits to a more sublime Dignitie, euen to be the Archcriticke of the sacred *Muses*. Whereby the noble Cynicall place left vacant his Maiestie bestowed it on the famous *Crates*, who yesterday morning went to *Apollo*, and contrary to all mens expectation refused to accept of this renowned Charge, freely affirming, that by the aduancement of *Diogenes* to that late transcendent Dignity, the Chaire of pouerty and contentment of mind, being now become vilified and much hindred, his heart would not giue him to exercise that Office with that candour, seruencie, and ingenuous simplicity of mind, as the affaires of that place required: because the very first day, when he should settle himself to his milde Lectures & peaceable Meditations, of necessity he could not but be swoln with some ambition, and be possessed with the like ardent desire & glorious hope to be enstalled in the same or such another Dignitie, as his Predecessor had obtained, who had cashired & cast out of his hart, though extraordinarily composed, that honest simplicity, which makes wise men to reason, and like a calme wind to breath with their harmlesse thoughts and not with the tongue, which oftentimes trips and deliues, like a clattering clapper, more noises and gall, then honeyed admonitions. To this he added, that the necessitie of ambition and the violence of desire did arise and flow, not from vice but from that honourable zeale, which also Philosophers, yea, the most mortified of all others in *Parnassus*, doe hold as the most earnest and intenciuē spurre of their Reputation. The reason is, because when they should not receiue in progresse of time, the same or the like prefermentes at his Maiesties hands, as he had conferred vpon *Diogenes*, the world would iudge all that came to passe, not by their professed humility,

## 188 *The New-found Politicke.*

nor because they with all their hearts and soules preferred the priuate life before publike Offices, quietnesse before businesse, and pouertie before riches: but because his Maiestie had not found in them those abilities, worths and desertes, which he had knowne and found in *Diogenes*. Therefore *Crates* foreseeing these inconueniences incident to this Office, his conscience would not permit him with such a troubled mind, so subiect to the violence of ambition, with any hope of doing good to reade Lectures of humilitie, the contempt of riches, and the vanitie of worldly greatness: it being a thing impossible to find any man so powerfully eloquent, which shall be able to perswade others to follow that kinde of life, which the hearers know to be abhorred and misliked of the Preacher himselfe.

### CHAP. 8.

*A Controuersie hapning betwixt the Gouvernors of Pindus and Libethrum about matters of Iurisdiction: Apollo punisheth them both.*

**I**N the Territorie of *Libethrum*, a hainous misdemeanure being committed, the Gouvernour of the place pursued the Offender, that fled to a Countrymans house adioyning to the Territorie of *Pindus*, and threatned to burne the house, except he yeelded his bodie. In the meane time the Gouvernour of *Pindus* vnderstanding that this place was in his Iurisdiction, hastned also thither. But before his arriual the Party had submitted himselfe prisoner to the Gouvernour of *Libethrum*: wherupon he of *Pindus* required the prisoner as his due being taken in his Liberties: but the other claimed the place, where the prisoner was apprehended, to be in his Patent or Commission. After much debating the question  
and



and difference, both Gouvernours not being able longer to contend in words, fell to blowes, and their men so sided with their Gouvernours, that there was much bloodshed on either part. *Apollo* hearing of these affronts sent for them both, and after long patience in examination of the difference, his Maiestie finding that the Gouvernour of *Libetbrum* had profferd the first wrong in rashly disturbing the Government of his Fellow-subiect, the place appearing now to be clearly in the Government of *Pindus*, though before somewhat litigious, he deprived him of his Gouvernment, and declared him incapable of bearing any charge from thenceforward. And for the Gouvernour of *Pindus*, whom his Maiestie found to haue most right to the Place and Prisoner, he condemned him for all that to the Gallies for ten yeares, aggravating this execution for example sake, to reach him and all other Officers, that they which serue the one and the same Prince or State, ought to defend the reasons of their Iurisdictions with the Pen, and not with the Pike, reseruing armes and force for strangers, which might inuade their Country. A case remarkable, and to be regarded of all such Officers bearing charge on any Frontier Townes, if not of Iudges of Courts, who though they be subiect to one Prince and the same Lawes, yet for matter of Iurisdiction do sometimes contend, punishing the poore Subjects for their ambition and ouersights.

## CHAP. 9.

*The Vertuous of Parnassus doe visit the Temple of the Diuine Prouidence, whom they humbly thanke for the great Charitie which his supreme Maiestie from time to time hath vouchsafed to shew vnto Mankind.*

**T**HIS Morning according to the ancient stile of this Court, the Temple of the Diuine Prouidence was visited by all the Scholasticall Princes, and learned Barons of *Parnassus*. And there *Iouianus Pontanus* with an excellent praier thanked our great Creator for the infinite charity and loue he hath shewed to Mankind, in creating *Frogs without teeth*; because it would haue beene an vnprofitable benefit for Mankind, that this world couered with so many Heauens, full of so many Stars, had beene created the chiefe and soueraigne height of all the most delicious pleasures, and not also as abundant of things more necessarie, when Gallants which should spend their time in defending themselves and vs from the bitings of such fastidious and importunate creatures, were like to walke with an insupportable impediment of iron boots: whereas now against such troublesome vermine, which haue no hurt in them sauing their croaking noise, a rampart of a good paire of eares sufficeth, which will not care for that ill-pleasing noise, which they know to be without danger.

CHAP. 10.

*A Contention hapning betweene many Learned men, which might be the most notable Politick Law, or most excellent Custome worthy of commendation in the flourishing State of Venice, the same is finally decided and determined by the Venetian State herselfe, to whose arbitrement the Question is referred by their generall consent.*

**W**orthy of Record is that vertuous Contention, which about six daies past arose betwixt certaine Learned men of this State; who while they discoursed of the notable orders, the most excellent Lawes, and other most rare Decrees, which maintained the famous Common-wealth of Venice in such height of greatnesse, they fell into sundry opinions, which of them ought to beare away the victory. And because every one of them did obstinately defend his owne opinion as the best, to the end so great a difference should be decided without commotion of minde or passion, they vnanimously agreed vpon this resolution, to appeare all of them before the State herselfe, to whom they should first declare their seuerall reasons, and that shee should afterwards adiudge which of them had aimed next vnto the marke. This they made knowne vnto the Soueraigne Lady, who gratioously vndertooke to giue that satisfaction which they expected.

*Petrus Crinitus* then was the first, who said, that it being a most assured rule, that all things whatsoever subsist  
under



## 192 *The New-found Politicke.*

*under the Moone, doe spring at first and then grow, and waxing old at last they faile:* it seemed a thing vnto him worthy of admiration, that the Venetian State alone did notwithstanding her yeares become more youthfull and fresh every day than other, and that those Lawes, Orders, and Decrees, which in other Principalities after long forbearing of their execution, were at length vtterly forgotten, did only in *Venice* so flourish with seueritie, with greater obseruance, and exacter diligence, working that efficacie and benefit, that in this Common-wealth no such reformation, nor innouation euer hapned, as heretofore wee read haue chanced with infinite tumults and hurliburlies in the ancient Romane State, and now of late in the *Florentine* Common-wealth; it being a peculiar vertue vnto the *Venetian* Senate, perpetually to preserue their flourishing liberty, with a seuerer execution of their ancient Lawes; whereby none of those defaults euer hapned in this State, which other Potentates and Free States could no way shun for all their exquisite care and diligence, but that they fell into such carelesse negligence, that they lost both their liberty and liues. Therefore not without good cause he dared to affirme, as a thing most certaine, that *the Venetian Common-wealth for their prudent care in the rigorous execution of their ancient Lawes ought to continue and prosper eternally, as long as the world lasteth.*

Next spake *Angelus Politianus*, that he did truly admire both what *Petrus Crinitus* had recounted, and a thousand other orders in that most prudent Common-wealth. But the rarest thing which he obserued, was how an *Aristocracie*, the true foundation whereof, as the most vnderstanding Writers haue deliuered, was *the equalitie of fortunes among the Nobilitie*, could haue beene able to maintaine it selfe in such peace and greatnesse, consisting in that disproportioned *inequality of wealth*; wherewith the *Venetian Nobilitie* is endowed, wherein although there were two such dangerous extremes found, as *immoderate riches* with some of them, and *much pouertie* with others of the same ranke in *Venice*, notwithstanding there appeared not that defect, which in  
humane

humane probability and according to the common course of the world, the best Lawes could not prohibite, that the richer sort did not trample the poorer vnder their feet, who though they greatly enuied the condition and state of the wealthy, yet notwithstanding either by reason of their affectionate charity, which reigned in the *Venetian Nobilitie* towards the publike good, or else because those infinite riches, which some of them so possessed, were not abused towards their Inferiours; both poore and rich liued modestly, peaceably, and contented in this most Fortunate Country.

After him followed *Julius Caesar Scaliger*, and said, that the greatest wonder in the *Venetian State*, which amazed the world, was that the *Nobilitie* themselves which bare sway, did not onely most patiently pay the vsuall ancient subsidies and tallages belonging to the *Exchequer*, but with incredible alacritie of minde and speedy performance, they assented on themselves other new impositions of money, which with great diligence and rigour were afterwards exacted and called for at the publike Receiuers hands. Yea and oftentimes in important affaires concerning the Common-wealth, before they burthened the common people with any new Customes and Taxations, they haue yeelded supplies out of their owne purses, and that so liberally and cheerfully, that this one act of theirs deserued place before all other wonders and remarkable orders in this State, as such a one, which euery man must acknowledge to be an act of that excellent quality, which renders the *Venetian Common-wealth* for euer glorious; for hauing such a *Nobilitie* so dearly inamoured of their Free-State, that they more readily preferred the publike interest before their owne private particular.

Then succeeded *Bernardo Tasso*, and said, that he had for a long time sojourned in *Venice*, where he maruelled at nothing more than to see the *Nobilitie*, who glutted their mindes with continuall pleasures, delights, and idlenesse, gouerning the affaires of the *Republike* with such admired

vertue, that they seemed vnto others to be men of an exemplarie and regular life, and also *Rulers* borne to perpetuall cares and burthens.

After the opinion of *Tasso*, *Francis Berni*, according to his manner, with a pleasing grace, which gaue good content to the *most Excellent Venetian Lady*, said, that the most rare and wonderfull thing, which great wits ought to admire in this State, that notwithstanding the marshes and chanelles did abound with crabs and creuices in all places about the Citie, the *Venetian Senators* tooke so few of them, that of all other Nations they were reputed, and that iustly, to be *the Salt of the Earth*.

Next vnto him, said *Sabellicus*, that while he wrote the *Venetian Historie*, hauing most diligently obserued the notablest Lawes and Customes of this renowned State, hee wondred at nothing more, than at the *Publike Treasure*, which carefull *Senators* managed with so great fidelitie, that among the Nobilitie it was held not only a capitall excellence, but exceeding great infamy to defile their hands with one penny of their Patron *S. Marks Treasurie*.

After him spake *Sannazzarius*, that the strangest thing vnto him was, that seeing there were many among the Noblemen of *Venice* poore and ill provided of the *Goods of Fortune*, yet neuerthelesse they endured with vspeakable patience all their miseries and crosse fortunes, without hauing the least thought of affecting any of the publike goods to be gotten either by ingrossing of corne, or by some vnequall diuision of lands, matters which mightily perplexed the State of *Rome*. And that it seemed vnto him a thing worthy of commendation to see a poore Nobleman in *Venice* so striue and force himselfe only by the helpe of *Virtue* to comfort himselfe in his miseries, hoping in time to deserue some honourable and profitable place of imployment in his Country, whereby at last it chanceth, that the *vertue, valour, and bountie of the minde* doe serue an impoverisshed Nobleman of this State in stead of a wealthy Patrimony.

*Ionianus Pontanus* said, that they which passed were great maruels,



maruels, but in his opinion this surpassed all things in the *Venetian* State, that the huge estates and infinite wealth of some Noble persons wrought not those pernicious effects to puffed them vp with vaine-glory and pride, as haue beene noted in many other Common-wealthes. And that it was a most laudable custome to see these Rich Senatours possessing Princely Treasures liue very priuately at home, and to shew themselves abroad little differing from ordinary people. Whereby all men may conceiue, that the *Venetians* onely doe know the true way and meane to distinguish and seuer from great riches those inconueniences of Ambition, Pride, and Popularity, which the famous *Romane* State neuer knew, or could not hinder in *Pompey*, *Cesar*, and many other powerful Senatours.

As soone as *Pontanus* had ended his discourse, *Hannibal Caro* said, that aboue all other wonders he thought it a matter worthy of greatest admiration, to obserue the quality of the Duke of *Venice*, followed with obedience and reuerence, with Regall Authoritie, with a great command: And for all that to see his Royalty and Princely sway moderated with a set Rule, and the power of his will ioyned with modestie were tempers vnknown to the prudent Lawgiuers of ancient times, and a kind of wisdom luckily practised among the *Venetians*.

*Bartholomew Canalcanti*, after him told his opinion, that as *Pontanus* had intimated, it was strange indeed, that their Senatours wealth and great Estates did not cause some of them to be puffed with ambition: But it was a more strange thing to see that such were the Orders of this Famous State, such the sacred Lawes of this euerlasting Common-wealth, that the high places and supreme governments, which some of their Senators inioyed as presidents in remoter Countries subiect vnto their Dominion, did not sometime or other prick them with ambition to rebell and vsurpe. And at that time when he lay there at *Venice*, he wondred not at the great Treasure of *Saint Marke*, nor at the *Armenall*, nor at the *Grand Canal*, with the proud Palaces of the *Cornaria*, the

## 196 *The New-found Politicke.*

*Grimani*, the *Foscari*, and other magnificent edifices built with such Royall expences in this renowned City being miraculous things in the sight of ordinary persons. But farre more miraculous in his conceit was, that he saw the Noble Signior *Sebastian Venieri*, a little after he had returned to *Venice* from that memorable victory at Sea, which hee had gotten being Generall against the *Turkes*, liue retired at his priuate house, and when hee walked abroad to the market place, hee differed in nothing from these Senators, who had stayed behind at *Venice*, but went very plaine and simple in apparell. And surely it is a most singular Custome, which they haue, that their Nobilitie can vse that ciuility and modestie in their owne Citie, and being employed abroad in matters of import and of high command, that they can suddenly transforme themselves into most costly garments, with such magnificence, and Princely liberality, to let the world know them for no Citizens of an ordinary State, but for men borne for great enterprizes and for braue Commanders, as if they were subiects descended from Royall blood; and also to make themselves famous vnto all other Nations by thus accommodating their affections and spirits to the nature of the place, and framing themselves as well to modesty, ciuilitie, and thrift at home, as to pompuous authority abroad. A thing so true, that whereas other States for the reputation and countenance of publike Magistrates are wont to recommend to their Gouvernours, that they maintaine the Maiestie of their soueraigne places, with magnificence and stately comportments both of courage and gorgeous apparell. The *Venetian* State on the contrary haue enacted Statutes to forbid any of their Citizens, which supply Offices of charge vnder them in any of their Territories to grace their presence with glorious shewes, or to weare any costly suits of apparell. So great a care haue those politicke Senators of their Cities thrift and prosperitie.

This spake *Canalcanti*, whē *Flauio Biondo* said, that whē he was at *Venice*, he became much astonisht to find in a pure *Aristocracie*, that the Citizens and Common people liued with such

such cōtentment in this fortunate coūtry, that in many years of his abode there, he could neuer learne, whether the publike State were better beloued and respected of the Nobility which cōmanded them, or of the cōmon people wch obeyed.

Next to him spake *Paulus Iouius*, that not onely vnto himselfe, but also vnto many great Princes, with whom hee oftentimes had conference, touching the wonders of *Venice*, it seemed a thing of great momēt that the Senate of this most famous Republicke, did altogether bend their endeauours vnto Peace, and to no other end at all, withall their vigilancy and care, not studying to make perpetuall preparations for the warres, as others did, whereupon they all concluded, that in this flourishing State alone, a man might find the Lady Peace armed withall exquisite appurtenances.

After *Iouius* ensued *Iohn Boccace*, who said, that the true salt, which preserved the *Venetian* State from the putrefaction and corruption of abuses, was the soueraigne Queene of all Lawes, that most excellent Order, so inuolably obserued of her, that for the aduancing of a Senatour to a higher place, not the glory of his Riches, not the merits of his Father, or Ancestors, nor the multitude of his Tenants or Friends, nor the fauour of great persons, but his owne worth and naked vertue were had in most consideration. From whence it comes to passe, that in *Venice* the vicious and ignorant Nobles were onely accounted a number, as Ciphers in Arithmetike, while the *Vertuous* alone, and the best deseruing subiect, bare the chiefe sway, *detur Digniori*, with that prudent care and circumspection, as is knowne vnto all the world.

But *Leonardus Aretinus* after he had extolled the opinion of *Boccace*, added, that the excellent vsage of the *Venetian* State, in not granting to their Nobilitie, the charge and Offices at the first iumpe, but by degrees, was the true solid foundation, wheron their Greatnesse consisted most firmly built, & withall the eternitie of their Libertie. For this is one of their most admired Precepts, That euery Nobleman whatsoeuer, before he mount up into the highest Dignity, must from his youth upwards be forced, like an enfranchised Townesman, to beginne from the



## 198 *The New-found Politicke.*

*lowest Offices, and not leaping wise and sodainly.* A most safe Custom, as that, which iustly distributed this important effect of vpholding the true and substantiall equality among the Nobilitie of an *Aristocracie*, which giues long life to a free State, because according to the certaine and vnderstanding policie of true gouernment, the equality of goods made not *Senatours* equall in a Common-wealth, but that all the Nobles should be first compelled to walke faire and softly to the most eminent places of command from the inferiour steps, which I haue formerly shewed. The which if the *Roman* Empire had practised, it had not shortned the life of their libertie, nor wrought those dangerous and fatall infirmities of tyrannies and tumults. Their grosse abuses in affording the Consular authority and the charge of armies vnto *Pompey*, the *Casars*, and to other wealthy and powerfull Citizens in their greene and vnsetled youth, was no other then as if they had chosen some of the Bloud-Royall in a Monarchy, as Lords and Patrons of their liberty, rather then *Senatours* of a well ordered Common-wealth. By which vnwitting error all men may note, that the freedome of *Rome* got her mortall wound and vtter desolation.

Albeit that the most excellent *Lady of the State of Venice* gaue apparant signes, that she seemed well contented with the opinion of *Aretine*, shee commanded notwithstanding that her *Vertuous Statesmen*, who aduanced themselves forwards, to proceed with their opinions. And then *Benedict Varchi* thus began: My *Florentine State*, which neuer knew the way of good fortune to bring in among her Noble Families, that Peace, Vnion, and mutuall loue, which makes the liberty of a Common-wealth euerlastingly durable, in the end fell into the infirmities of seruidude, puts me now in a great amazement, and I thinke it may surpasse all other maruells in this State, when I consider with deliberation, that a Nobleman of *Venice*, although most grieuously offended for the life of his sonnes, and for his owne proper person, enforced more with a seruent charity towards the freedome of his Countrey, then terrified with the seuerity of Magistrates, had

had learne d that difficult lesson of resolution, to forgiue at the instant the wrong which he had receiued at his Aduersaries hands, and that with a free heart. A resolution worthy of remembrance, and by so much the more wonderfull by how much it is cleerely obserued, that a Nobleman of *Venice* referres the reuenge of all receiued iniuries into the Senates hand with all willingnesse of mind, the which sensuall and brutish men, yea & many of the wiser sort without the length time and much struggling of nature cannot yeeld vnto God, to whom vengeance belongeth, and from whom wee must all acknowledge our liues, liuing, and liberty to proceed. This *Varchi* spake, when *Lodouico Dulce* began the deliuey of his Opinion, that if that were true, which all confessed, that the rarest and most prized greatnesse that might be considered in a Prince, was to disarme with facilitie and without danger one of his war-like Generals, and to receiue of him exact and conformable obedience, for all that that this Generall did aforehand know, and long before his returne, how his Prince grew in suspition of his loyalty, or in dislike of his seruice: Then this custome vsual in the state of *Venice*, deserued more to be wondred at then any other, to be able to disarme with great ease, their Generals and Admirals at Sea. Yea, and at such time when they vnderstood how the Senate was earnestly bent to punish them at their returne, notwithstanding that they found themselues very strong, beloued of their souldiers, and powerfull enough to offend the State, or to defend themselues from shame, it alwayes fell out, that as soone as euer they were sent for, they readily and presently obeyed, voluntarily they resigned ouer their charge, and publike command, and with all speed hastned to *Venice*, to be sentenced by their friends and Citizens, though with Capitall punishment, which they willingly endured, rather then to hazard the losse of their Countrey by vnnaturall innouations, and ciuill warres. So deare vnto them is the care of the Common safetie.

The most excellent *Venetian Lady*, who without answering any thing to the *Vertuous* aboue-named had attentiuely heard

heard all these commendable Orders and admirable Prerogatiues said to *Dulce*, that the matter which he related, was indeed of great consequence, yet not so rare, but that the *Ottoman* Emperours likewise participated of the like benefit. Howbeit neuerthelesse, there was one singular Prerogatiue, which she most exactly possessed, and wherein she excelled all other Principalities, as well of the ancient, as present times, whereto she acknowledged and ascribed all her Greatnesse, the which as yet she did not heare any of them as much as touch.

Then spake *Hieronymus Mercurialis*, that while he read the Physicke Lecture at the Vniuersitie of *Padua*, hee knew some of the *Plebeian* and common sort at *Venice*, that went in their *Gundoloes* to disport themselves vpon the water with some young *Courtexans*, according to their common custome, and there being mightily misused by certaine young *Noble-men*, whom they casually met, it chanced that these *Plebeians* slew one of them in the affray. For which offence vpon complaint made by the parties friends, the *Plebeians* were sent for by the *Iudges*, who although they knew the power of the Law to be in the hands of the *Nobilitie*, whom they had offended, neuer fled, but trusting in the vprightnesse and integrity of the Senate and Magistrates, they doubted not to appeare before them; and to yeeld themselves prisoners. Neither did their hopes faile them, for vpon consideration of the cause given in euidence for their defence, how they were prouoked first by those young *Noble-men*, they were enlarged and pronounced innocent to the honour of the *Venetians* vncorrupted Iustice: so that neither powerfull parentage, greatnesse of friends, nor abundance of wealth can blinde and diuert the Iudges of *Venice* to wrong any man.

Last of all, these vertuous States-men spake the most learned *Hermolaus Barbarus*, that in a free State Tyranny begins then to vsurpe and worke, when the most weightie secrets concerning the generall good of the *Common-wealth*, are communicated to a few Senators. And for this cause the  
most



most *Soueraigne Lady of Venice*, to auoid shipwracke on that dangerous rockie shelve, imparted her *Secrets*, and deliberated the designes and pragmatiques of greatest import, wherein her state was interessed in her highest Court of Magistracy or Parliament of the *Pregadi*, a number cōsisting of two hundred and fiftie Senators and vpwards; and to him it appeared to be a miraculous thing, how the *Venetian State* could finde among so great a number of Senators that Secrecie, which many great Potentates for all their exquisite diligence and large entertainment of gifts and rewards, had bootlesse sought in one only Secretarie, or in a couple of Counsellors of State.

At these words, the most excellent *Venetian Lady* laid her hand on the shoulders of *Barbarus*, and pronounced this verdict: Now thou hast hit the naile on the head, and named that most pretious Jewell, wherein I most glory, and prize my selfe aboue all other States, and for which indeed I ought to be iustly emulated and enuied at, seeing that nothing else appertaines for the true gouernment and managing of State-businesse, more necessary than Secrecie.

---

CHAP. II.

The Doctors of the Chaire hauing admitted into their Vniuersitie some famous Poeticall Ladies, Apollo commands them to be dismissed home to their Families.

---

THE famous Doctors of the Chaire, about a few moneths past, admitted the most vertuous Ladies *Victoria Colonna*, *Laura Terracina*, and other learned Poeticall Ladies of *Parnassus* into their *Academicall Corporation*, where

they vsed times to resort to their publike exercises. But it chanced so that many Schollers enamoured with the beautie of these Ladies, did not only flocke oftner than they were accustomed, into the Schooles, whensoever they vnderstood that these Ladies repaired thither, but also consumed their pretious time and wits in composing of amorous Sonnets, which they dedicated vnto these Ladies, as if they were Goddes, with such rare conceits and lofty tunes, as eclipsed the glory of the Muses themselues. At length the fauour of these Sonnets, though fragrant and sweet in the Schollers apprehensions, offended *Apolloes* diuine nostrills worse than the stinke of a Blackamore. For which cause before the end of these Ladies probationship and their matriculation, his Maiestie charged the Cathedrall Doctors to dismitte them out of the Vniuersitie. His reason was because he well saw out of his Diuine knowledge, that *the true poetry of women were the Needle, the Distaffe, and the wheele*, and that the Schoole exercises of Ladies among Vniuersitie men might well be likened vnto the dalliance and playing of Dogs, which after some fained snarling, catching, and gamesome tossing one another, doe conclude their sport in riding and mounting vpon their play-fellowes backs.

---

CHAP.

---

## CHAP. 12.

*The Lady Victoria Colonna intreats of Apollo, that the infamie which women incurred for cuckolding their Husbands, might likewise extend to adulterous Husbands.*

*Apolloes answer.*

**T**He most Excellent Lady *Victoria Colonna* a Princess of exemplarie chastitie, about three daies past appeared in his Maiesties Court of Audience, and in the name of all womankind said, that they all loued the excellencie of chastitie, which was naturally giuen them for a most particular vertue, that they did not a whit enuy *Courage*, a vertue attributed to mans sexe, because they well knew, that a Lady without the soule of chastitie, which renders her odoriferous to the world, was but a stinking carcasse: yet notwithstanding it seemed vnto them, that they had much cause to grieve and lament at the great inequality, which they saw betwixt the Husband and the Wife in the particular punishment of Adultery; so that women could not rest contented to see men in such wise free, that the punishment of shame, which alone was wont to terrifie honourable persons, did now lesse serue to restrain them from committing against their wiues these beastly and libidinous defaults. In which dissolute courses they said, that they proceeded so far, that many Husbands were not onely not ashamed to keepe openly Concubines in their houses, but had oftentimes presumed to make them partakers of the sacred bed of Matrimonie. These abuses came to passe, by reason that the Lawes had not provided the like punishment against the offending Husbands, as were thundred out and practised



## 204 *The New-found Politicke.*

against adulterous Wiues. And that in this case, the Lawes shewed too much fauour vnto married men, in allowing them to reuenge the iniurie with their owne hands at the time when they hapned to take their wiues in the adulterous act. By which notorious aggrauances the Sexe of women being so much wronged, were now forced to repaire vnto the cleare fountaine of true Iustice, to the end that by publishing equall punishment in the equalitie of the self-same fault, there might be some competent remedy ministred for their oppressions. And that if this did not stand with *Apollos* good will and pleasure, there might be at leastwise the like liberty granted vnto them in this particular of Adultery to keepe amorous seruants, or to marry againe, as many men aduentured to doe. After which liberty granted them, they would not perhaps make vse thereof, but only *in terrorem tantum*, vnder colour of law to be enabled to bridle their loose and lustfull Husbands.

Vnto this demand of the *Lady Victoria*, *Apollo* answered, that the *Law of Fidelitie* betwixt the Husband and the Wife ought to be indeed equall, and that the defect and breach thereof ought to be punished no lesse in the one, than in the other: but that in the Wife a more exquisite and perfect chastitie was required for the great and weighry respect to know the certainty of their children, to which end Nature had assigned them the noble vertue of Chastitie, the which was so necessarie for procreation of humane kinde, that without it the children should both lose their inheritance and their fathers affection. A thing so true, that Nature herselfe hath most prouidently allotted chaste wiues to all liuing creatures of the earth, where the Male concurreth for the industrious hatching of the Egge, or for the nourishing of their young ones; all to the end that the carke of the fathers being employed for their childrens welfare should proue somewhat pleasing, and that their charge should redound to comfort, and to great gaine in time to come.

At these words the *Lady Victoriaes* beautifull checks were stained with an honourable blush, who with a *Roman* ingenuitie

nuitie confelſed vnto his Maieſtie the ſimplicitie of her demand, and ſaid, that indeed it were a great ſhame and diſhonour to the ſexe of women, if in the precious gift of chaſtitie they ſuffred themſelues to be overcome of thoſe vnreaſonable living creatures, who although they purſue no other thing than pleaſure, yet neuertheleſſe doe they very religiously obſerue Chaſtitie, becauſe they would not anger the fathers of their young ones by their wandring and inordinate luſt. And for the important reaſon, that Huſbands deſired to haue their wiues chaſte, the lawes againſt adulterous women were too ſauourable, becauſe the wound which the vnchaſte Huſband giues his Wiſe did only pierce the ſkin, whereas the Wiſe by her laſcivious deeds doth ſtab and kill her Huſband with the poniard of euerlaſting infamy, and alſo doth diſparage her children.

CHAP. 13.

*A Poetaſter for playing at Cards and deuizing the Game called Triumph or Trump, is brought before Apollo, who after he had deeply entred into the myſticall meaning of the ſaid Game, not only diſmiſſeth him, but granteth him an yearely penſion to inſtruct his Courtiers in that new Art.*

**T**O the end, that the Ignorant with the filthineſſe of their moſt beaſtly minds ſhould not profane the *ver-  
tuous places at Parnaſſus*, Apollo many yeares ſince cauſed two companies of *Skeltenicall Poets*, dogrel Rimers, men that made verſes at random, and very aduentrous at

ruffianly conceits to come out of *Sicily*, whose office was to scour the countrey and to cleare the coast, of vagabonds. These, about eight daies past, rooke prisoner a *Poetaster*, that had beene capitally banished from *Parnassus*, who although he was forbidden the vse of all books, and the exercise of his pen, notwithstanding as it were in despite of *Apollo*, and in contempe of the sacred *Muses*, he defiled paper with his dissolute rimes, and at last proceeded so far in his audacious arrogancie, that he assumed vnto himselfe the Soueraigne name of a Poet. This exorbitant fault of his became aggravated with a paire of Cardes, which those Carch-poles in searching him had found in his pocket, for which being likewise a notorious Vice and worthy of death they brought him incontinently with the said Cardes before *Apollo*, who when he saw them was wonderfully amazed at the brutish inuention, which the vicious had found out to cast away their precious time, to consume their reputation, and to spend their meanes. But much more was his Maiestie astonished, when he vnderstood, that men now a dayes were growne to such a height of folly, that they vsed to call that thing a Play or Game, whereat they dealt so cruelly in good earnest. And further that they esteemed it a delight, sport, and pastime to put in suspence and to doubtfull compromise that money, which was gotten with so much toyle and cares, and serued so necessary for such great vses, that without it, this present world would take *Aristotle* to bee an ignorant foole, and *Alexander the Great* a base *Placiar*.

Then *Apollo* askt the Prisoner, what game at Cardes was most familiar vnto him, and because he answered, that it was *Trumps* or *Triumph*, his Maiestie willed him to play it. The Prisoner obeyed, and plaide; which when *Apollo* had observed & penetrated into the magisteriall lessons and secrets of the Game, he cried out, that this *Game of Trumpe* was the true *Philosophy of Courtiers*, the most necessaric Science, which all men ought to learne, that would not be thought innocents or simple-witted. And shewing how much the  
affront



affront done vnto the prisoner did displease him, he enlarged him presently, and honoured him with the title of a *Vertuous man*. And the next morning commanded his Officers to erect vp a publike Schoole, where with a stipend of five hundred Crownes a yeare, that notable Person for the common good should reade as a Lecture that excellent *Game of Trumpe*, and vpon a grieuous penalty to be imposed, hee charged the *Platonicks*, *Peripateticks*, the *Stoicks*, and other *Philosophers*, specially the *Morall*, and to all other the *Vertuous crew* residing at *Parnassus*, that they should learne this most necessarie Science, the which because they should not forget, he bound them to practise themselves therein one houre at least euery day. Although it seemed strange to the *Learned*, how it could be possible, that out of a most vile *Game* deuised by the off-scum raskals of men there might be drawne any profitable document for honest men: yet notwithstanding, they all knowing that his Maiestie neuer commanded any thing, which did not afterward redound to their good and to a speciall purpose, they obeyed so willingly that this Schoole was in as great request, and frequented no lesse than an Vniuersitie. But when the *Learned* had discovered the Magisteriall secrets, the hidden mysteries, and admirable cunning tricks of this triumphant *Game of Trumps*, they extolled *Apolloes* profound iudgment to the eighth Heauen, all of them with one voice celebrating and magnifying it in all places, that it was not *Philosophie*, *Poetry*, nor yet the *Mathematicks*, nor *Astrologie*, nor any other famous knowledge, but it was the most rare *Game of Trumps*, which taught men, chiefly great men and Courriers, that secret of most import, how euery seuerall *Trumpe* tooke vp and got, as aprety, even the goodliest of all the Cards.

## CHAP. 14.

*It being noted, that Petus Thraseas in the Company of his sonne in law Eluidius Priscus did use commonly to frequent the house of the Lady Victoria Colonna, he is grievously rebuked by Apollo.*

**I**T was obserued by those vertuous Censors, whose office and delight consisted in looking to other mens deeds, that *Petus Thraseas*, in the company of *Eluidius Priscus* his sonne in Law extraordinarily haunted the house of the *Lady Victoria Colonna*, and also of other learned Dames of this Court. And though the said *Thraseas* were reputed for a man of singular good parts, that one would hardly suspect any obscene or lewd action in so great a Senatour, his visuall and daily visites together with his continuall abodes in these Ladies houses, occasioned so great a scandall, yea, among the vertuous themselves, that the smell thereof ascended euen to his Maiesties nostrils; who to extinguish the flames of these slanderous murmures, about two dayes since sent for *Thraseas*, and expressely commanded him to reueale what businesse he had in resorting so often to these Ladies houses. *Thraseas* answered, that he frequented them, onely to exercise charity among these Ladies, by reading euery day vnto them a Chapter of *Boetius* his booke of the *Consolation of Philosophy*. Vpon this answer *Apollo* was so grievously moued against *Thraseas*, that in great anger he said: It with your talent and zealous office by giuing office by giuing comfort & consolations to the afflicted, you hope to merit grace at Gods hand, and to obtaine good will among men, goe your wayes to comfort

comfort those poore wretches, who die of meere necessitie and pure want in the Hospitalls, or those vnfortunate people, who are condemned to the gallowes or *Spanish* gallies. But to sit all day long closely among *Ladies*, as *Sardanapalus* v-  
sed to doe, thinking to make men beleue, that you exercise Spirituall doings, they are such hypocrisies, as will moue the veriest idiot to laugh at you, and will make them to burst with rage, that know, how these which goe often to the mill become whited with meale. And a man of your wisdome ought to vnderstand, that at such time as a woman conceiues of two infants, which we call *Twinn*s, if both be male, they are enclosed within one membrane, the which likewise comes to passe, if both be female. But if it happens, that one be male, and the other female, most prouident nature preserues the female in a perticular membrane, seuered from the male. Seeing that Nature thought good not to thrust a little brother and a little sister of that tender age to dwell together in one place, she teacheth all men, and especially men of your fashion to liue more warily and securely; and in these doings, O *Thraseas*, whosoever trusteth his owne power, I hold him to be more rash than wise.

And for that these disorders, in regard of our reputation and yours, had need to be corrected, I doe straitly command you, that from henceforth you leaue off such dangerous practises. The world is not so sottishly simple, as you more simply conceiue it, but that they doe well vnderstand, how the visites which men of your qualitie vse vnto *Ladies*, doe begin to smell after the second time, and specially in their noses, that know, how faire and beautifull things seeme pleasing to all men, and that the prouocation of the flesh is a naturall vice in all men, the which they cannot cure and keepe backe with a more excellent remedy, than to stand a farre off from such faire and goodly obiects: There's no safer way to defend a man from error, than to shunne the occasions. And all your Philosophy cannot produce such proofes, as will make any man of iudgement beleue, that a dainty bit of flesh doth not agree with euery mans mouth, that is made of flesh.



## 210 *The New-found Politicke.*

Lastly, I must put you in minde, that a man of your credit and condition, who makes profession about all things not to defile the white robe of your Reputation with the spots of lasciuious oile, ought not at all to busie himselfe about lampes; it being not onely great folly, but most insolent rashnesse, worthy of the whip and strapado, to think he can make gun-powder in a forge, where a smith workes nailes, and afterwards to perswademen, that he might goe to the field without danger.

---

### CHAP. 15.

*A learned Gentleman of Rome begs a remedie of Apollo, to make him to forget certaine grievous wrongs, which he had receiued in the Court of a great Prince: for which cause his Maiestie causeth him to drinke a cup-full of the water of Lethe, but with vnfortunate successe.*

---

**A** Learned Gentleman of *Rome*, which some few dayes since arriued at *Parnassus*, was yesterday admitted to his Maiesties Royall Audience, vnto whom he shewed, that for many iniuries, which hee had receiued of diuers ill willers of his in the Court of a certaine Prince, where the Lawyers persecuted him, and made him pay about three score fencrall fees by their cunning trickes of Law, he hath since liued very much troubled in minde, and so much the more, for that he could not worke his reuenge vpon them without incurring farre greater troubles, then his Enemies had plunged him in. And on the other side, he found that he was not endowed with that generous resolution of forgetting and forgiuing them. For which cause, and now to be freed

freed from this hellish torment, wherein he perpetually liued, he repaired to his Maiestie, whom most humbly he intreated to bestow vpon him some present remedie to heale his mind, which was galled with the passions of hatred and reuenge.

*Apollo* did much pitie this Gentlemans case, and commanded that one should giue him a large cup-full of the water of *Lethe*, prepared in such manner, that it might cause him to forget odious things, and not to take away the remembrance of benefits receiued. The Gentleman with great greedinesse drunke vp the water, the which to all mens wonder was found to haue only the vertue to blot and cancell out of his minde those iniuries, which he had receiued of his inferiours in condition; and that the iniuries which were done vnto him, by greater persons than himselfe, had inflamed and exasperated his minde rather with an euerlasting memory of them, than any way caused him to forget them. Whereat many began to murmur, that the famous water of *Lethe* had lost that pretious vertue, which the Poets had blazed of it. But his Maiestie gaue them to vnderstand, that the water of *Lethe* had euermore the same vertue, which it had in the beginning. And in that it did not worke the expected effect in that Gentleman; the reason was, because persons nobly descended, and of great spirits, had euer this custome proper vnto their natures, to write in the sand these iniuries, which they receiued of base people; but in solid marble with eternall characters those aboue-handed blowes, which were giuen them by their equalls, or superiours; it being the propertie of a noble mind to remit wrongs by magnanimitie, but not to pardon them of necessitie.

## C H A P. 16.

*Apuleius his golden Asse, and Plautus his Asse doe complaine vnto Apollo of the great seueritie which their Masters vsed in beating them. But they are sent away with no pleasing answer.*

**A**Bout the eight of the Current *Apuleius* his famous Asse accompanied with *Plautus* his Asse, appeare before *Apolloes* Maiestie, who in the name of all the sort of Mules, Asses, and Pack-horses, said, that if any kinde of beasts subiect to mankind, which were of small expence and of much profit, had deserued better vsage than others; they had most reason aboue all other beasts, to grieue at their Masters rough and rigorous dealings. And although they bare the whole burthen of their Lords houses, and maintained them both day and night by their perpetuall labours, and were content to feed ordinarily on sedge, straw, and water, and to keepe their Shrowetide with branne, and such poore prouender; all this notwithstanding they were ingratfully, cruelly, and with great indiscretion entreated by their Masters, and being the most vnhappy of all creatures, they were now become the miserable spectacle of all drudgery. For as much as they could not by their prostrate and humble seruices mollifie the passionate minds of their Lords, they petitioned his Maiestie in most lowly manner to commiserate their Asinine miseries, if not to conclude and end them, yet

at



at least to order the matter so, that by his Maiesties command their Patrons would thenceforth vse them, though not gratefull respects for their great seruices, yet with moderation of passion, and with more hmanitie.

Vnto these *Apolio* answered, that the seuerity, which Masters vsed towards their pack-horses, whereof they so bitterly complained, proceeded not out of their Masters naturall crueltie, since that it is plaine, that no man yet hated the vtilitie and benefit of his heritage, but rather from their monstrous sloth, and stupendious stupiditie of the pack-horses, through which most brutish defaults, their Masters were enforced furiously with whips and goads to pricke them on to doe that labour, which otherwise for want of quicknesse they had not spirit enough of themselues to performe. And whosoever would exactly iudge and determine of any mans cruell and rigorous dealings, he had need not on-ly to haue regard vnto the *genius* and nature of him that exerciseth and vseth this correction, as to the qualitie and manners of him, that complains he is hardly dealt with.

## CHAP. 17.

*A generall Reformation of the world by the seven wise men of Greece, and by other Learned men, is published by expresse Order from Apollo.*

**I***ustinian* the Emperor, that great Composer of the *Codes* and *Pandeets*, some few dayes since brought a new Law vnto *Apollo*, to haue the same approoued of his Maiestie, whereby it was straightly forbidden, that any man should waxe so cruell against his owne person, as to be the Authour of his owne death. *Apollo* seeing this Law, had it in so great horreur, that with a sigh, which proceeded from the bottome of his heart, he brake forth into these speeches: Is the good gouernment of Mankinde precipated into such disorder, O *Iustinian*, that they will now a dayes voluntarily attempt their owne deathes, because they will not liue any longer, as they ought? And whereas I haue hitherto hired a great number of the wisest morall Philosophers, to the end that with their toignes and writings they should Minister vnder mee graue and ciuill conceits vnto others, which might make Death seemed lesse terrible, are things now reduced to that great calamity, that men wil no longer liue, nor yet learn to accommodate theselues to die well? And do I carelesly sleep, while these disorders abound among my learned Fraternitie? To these words of *Apollo*, *Iustinian* answered, that this Law was very necessary, and that many notorious effects hauing happened by these desperate courses, more inconueniences would yet ensue, if his Maiestie did not in time provide some conuenient remedy to salue the wilfull disorders of

of these Franticke fellowes. Whereupon *Apollo* tooke diligent Information of that manner of life, which the world lead, and found that it became extraordinarily depraved with euill customes, the which to reforme hee resolved to create a Congregation of some notable Personages, the most prudent and ingenuous Politicians of his Empire. But in the very beginning of this serious talke he met with inuincible difficulties, for being come to the point, to appoint a number of subiects among his Morall Philosophers, and those innumerable Vertuous Spirits which attended his Court, he could not light on any to his absolute liking, sufficiently enabled for so great a businesse, by reason that his Maiestie knew, that the sanctitie of life, and the good example of the Reformer wrought a greater force and power in them, w<sup>ch</sup> were to be reformed, then the best Rules, which the wisest State could enact and publish. In this penurious exigent, *Apollo* referred the charge of the Worlds vniuersall reformation to the seuen wise men of *Greece*, men that are held and reputed to be in the chiefe credit at *Parnassus*, was those which in all mens conceit haue learnt the receit and way to make straight the Dogs leg, which with so much paines (yet alwayes in vaine) Antiquity hunted after. The rumour of these newes being come to the *Grecians* eares, it reioyced them exceedingly for the honour, which his Maiestie vouchsafed vnto their Nation; as on the other side, it much troubled the *Latines*, it seeming vnto them, that they herein had singular great wrong offered vnto them to be excluded. *Apollo* perceiuing, that this emulation might much hinder the generall Reformation, to take away all impediments, and to yeeld some satisfaction to the discontented *Romans*, to those *Grecian Sages* he adioyned *Marcus Cato* and *Anneus Seneca*, and in fauour of the *Italian Philosophers*, hee constituted *Iacobus Maxxon* Secretary of the Congregation, whom he graced with a consultiue voyce.

Vpon the nineteenth day of the aforesaid moneth, all these famous *Sages* and new Reformers brauely accompanied with a great Troupe of the Noblest Vertuous of this State  
went



went into the *Delphick Palace*, the place appointed for this businesse of Reformation, and to the Learned it was a pleasing sight to behold the great number of *Pedantes*, which with table-books in their hands went quoting and laying downe the *Sentences* and *Apothegmes*, which these continually let slip out of their harmonious mouths.

As soone as these learned and wise Lords were reunited to declare their remedies, the same is, that *Thales the Milesian*, the first of the seven Sages, began in this manner :

*Most prudent Philosophers* ; The businesse for which we are now here assembled together, is the greatest, which the wit of man can treat of ; and although no other enterprife may be found so hard, as to heale an inveterate *Neapolitane bone-ache*, an infistulated *Gangrene*, an incurable *Canker*, yet notwithstanding, the insuperable difficulties, which weare out other mens braines, ought to animate men of our ranke to overcome them, seeing that the supposed impossibilitie of the Cure will augment our glory, and will maintaine vs still in that sublime and high degree of reputation, wherein we are eleuated ; and now I firmly assure my selfe, that I have found out the true *Antidote* for the easie expulse of these venomous and banefull corruptions. I am confident, that there is not any of vs, but assures himselfe, that no other disease hath infected the healthfull life of this present Age, than the hidden hatred, dissimulation, equiuocation, and treachery of men covered ouer with the faire mantle of Religion, of Loue, Simplicie, and Charity ; the which, my good Lords, being corrected with Cauteries, Razours, and with Corrosiue Plaisters fit for this cancred wound, such as I shall now discouer, all men liuing, which at this time are by these vices brought euen to Deaths doore, all other *Physicians* hauing left them without hope of recouery, shall suddenly become restored to their former health, and shall resume that sinceritie, that verity of speech, and that holinesse of life, which in ancient times hath beene esteemed true-hearted candour, genuine simplicitie, and plaine dealing. The true remedie then is of necessitie to reduce men into an  
ingenuous

ingenuous kinde of liuing, and to embrace that simplicitie of the heart, which they can neuer doe, before Princes haue with their high authoritie chased out of their Kingdomes irreligious hypocrites of a different Religion, as Woltes of State, and also to cut off wrangling suits at Law; nor these can they euer bring to passe without diminishing the number of Lawyers, and needlesse Courts of Iustice, which hearten euen sheepe to turne vpon their keepers. These, these abuses, most *vertuous Lords*, being so restrained, then lies, falshoods, double dealing, and hypocrisies, will depart, as the chiefe nourishment of the *Infernali Spirit* out of the possessed soules homeward to their Master the *Deuill*.

In such wise did this opinion of *Thales* worke within the rest of the *Sages* hearts, that he was ready to goe away with all their suffrages and voices, when *Mazzon* the Secretary commanded him to rehearse the same vnto *Apollo*, who approued so well of *Thales* his remedy, that he commanded out of hand a Chirurgion to make a little window in the heart of man. But in the same houre, when the Chirurgion had prepared his instruments to open the breast of man for that purpose, *Homer*, *Virgil*, *Plato*, *Aristotle*, *Auerroes*, and some other learned men repaired to *Apollo*, and signified vnto his Maiestie, that the chiefe instrument, which with great facilitie gouerned the world, was the reputation of those which commanded it, and that a iewel of that worth ought neuer to be exposed vnto any perill by wise Princes. They laid before his Maiesties consideration the credit of a holy life, the opinion of the bounty of customes, wherein the excellent *Philosophicall Senate*, and the *Honourable Colledge of the Vertuous* were had in great reuerence among all the learned Subiects of *Apolloes* Empire. And if his Maiestie would suddenly cause all mens hearts to be opened, the greatest and best sort of his Vertuous Followers could not but suffer infinite shame & infamie, whonow were in chiefe credit about his sacred Person, when they should see euen boyes to take notice of their foolishnesse, as who is wise at all seasons? Yea and his Maiestie himselfe would grow

## 218 *The New-found Politicke.*

into hatred with his most principall Fauourites, when hee saw they were not such notable persons of an vnspotted life as he reputed them to be. And by these meanes he should lose the most part of his Dependants, to the vtter depopulating of famous *Parnassus*. And for this cause, before his Maestie would attempt this important enterprise, they humbly desired in the name of all the Vertuous, to grant them some competent time to purifie their mindes, and to lay them a little a bucking. The aduise of these famous persons greatly pleased *Apollo*, and by a publike Edict he prorogued the terme of making the window vntill eight daies were expired, in which time the Vertuous in such manner toyled themselves in cleansing their minds of all hidden fallacies, of counterfeit friendship, of inbred rancour, and other stinking vices, that in the Grocers, Druggists, and Apothecaries shops of *Parnassus*, all the sweet Conserues, Cinnamon, Cassia, Syrops, Lozenges, Roses, Violets, and other pretious wares were all spoiled with the taint, and the stench abounded so corrupt, that all the quarters of the Platonick and Peripaterick Philosophers, smelt worse than if the filthiest lakes of the Countrey were emptied; whereas the street of the Latin and Italian Poets, smelt only like the broth of reheated Coleworts. Now the time for the vniuersall bucking and purifying, that was limited, became almost ended, when the day before the opening of the window in mens hearts, the great *Hippocrates*, *Galen*, *Cornelius Celsus*, and other experimented Physitians of this State went to *Apollo*, and freely spake their minds in this manner:

*Royall Sir*, if this worke goes forward, wee must needs deface this little world of mankinde, most noble for the miraculous workmanship, wherewith it is wrought with euident perill of an important musckle and a principall veine, and by that meanes kill and destroy the whole fabricke of *Mans Microcosme*, or at least make it for euer sickly and crazed. And so great an euill we might practise onely by the benefit of foure ignorant persons, seeing that not only the profoundest wits, but likewise men of meane iudgement  
onely



onely with foure daies practise, which they may haue with any notable Hypocrite whatsoeuer, they know how to penetrate into the most inward gutt. With *Apollo* this speech of the Physitians so preuailed, that he resumed his former deliberation, and by *Ansonius Gallus* made it knowne vnto the *Lords Reformers*, that they should continue their *Philosophicall* opinions.

Then *Salon* thus began: The cruell hatred and poysonfull enuie, which vniuersally breed among men, and domineere ouer them in these daies, are these, *most prudent Lords*, which to my thinking haue so confounded the world in the case, as we see it. The correction then consisteth in insufling of Charitie in mens hearts, and the sacred loue towards their Neighbours, which is one of the Precepts of God. We must now imploy the whole engine of our ablest wits to take away the occasions of *Hatred*, which make them so savage and implacable. I haue to the vttermost of my vnderstanding diued into the mysticall cause of this *Hatred*, and I finde it to proceed of the inequality of worldly goods by that hellish vsage of *Mine and Thine* among our worldlings, the very rock of all scandals. And it is manifest, that mens mindes depraued by Ambition, Couetousnesse, and Tyrannie, haue occasioned this inequality and disproportioned Diuision. And seeing that is true, which all must confesse, that this world is no other than an inheritance left by one Father and one Mother vnto mankind, from whom as Brothers we all descend; what Iustice is there, but that euery one of vs should not haue share and share like throughout all the wide world, the one as well as the other? But now it falls out otherwise, that the Good and Vertuous haue the least part, and the wicked the greatest part: The honest man a begger, the dishonest by a preposterous order haue gotten their right, and will not communicate the same, no not to their owne flesh and bloud, and neereft kinne. Now I haue discovered vnto you the wound, it is easie to apply the medicine. The best aduise which I can giue, is to come vnto a new diuision of the world, and to let euery man haue his

## 220 *The New-found Politicke.*

share; and by this meanes there will be enough for euery one of vs without troubling one another: Though Tyrants and Lawyers may for a time grudge at this equalitie, yet true Iustice requires it for the pacifying of this vnnaturall hurly-burly. And further to take away all disorders in time to come, let there bee a Law enacted to forbid all chopping and changing, all buying and selling to the worlds end.

A long time this opinion of *Solon* was canuased, the which although it was esteemed necessary, but not altogether good, by *Bias*, *Periander*, and *Pittacus*, was reprobued notwithstanding by the rest of the *Philosophicall Lords*; whiles that the iudgement of the wise *Seneca* preuailed, who with most liuely reasons made all the *Lords of the Congregation* to vnderstand, that if now they should come to a new diuision of the world againe, there would ensue a very great disorder, that too great a part would fall into the share of Gluttons, and too little among braue Spirits, who hold Sobriety, Temperance, and Reason, the chiefe meanes to distinguish them, which beare the *image of God* in their soules from bestiall *Satanicall* creatures; and that the *Plague*, *Famine* and *Warre* were not, as many thought, the most rigorous scourges wherewith God in his anger afflicts mankind, but that the forest and most grievous whip, wherewith he may torment them, is *to enrich villaines*, and base minded misers, whose pelfe will at last worke the ruine of their dearest and better part being their Soules.

As soone as *Solon*s opinion was refelled, *Chilon* produced his: Which of you (quoth he) *most wise Philosophers*, knowes not, That the insatiabable *thirst of Gold and Silver* hath not occasioned such mischiefes in the world, as wee all see and many of vs haue felt? What impietie, what wickednesse, what vnnaturall act is there, which men will not commit, and that with all diligence, to rake together a masse of money and wealth? Conclude yee then all courageously with me, that to root those vices out of the world wherewith this Age is corrupted, there is no better way than to exterminate and vtterly to abolish the vse of those pestife-

rous mettals, *Gold and Siluer*, the true prouocations of all these miseries: *Irrimenta malorum.*

Very goodly and specious in apparance seemed the sentence of *Chilon*, but when it came to the scanning and triall, it proued not solid at the stroke of the hammer of liuely reasons. Because it was answered, that men had brought the vse of *Gold and Siluer*, that it might stand for the measure and counterpoyse of all bargains & commerce betwixt party and party. And if *Gold and Siluer* were prohibited, they must of force imploy some other mettall or commoditie to supply their necessities, which likewise would replenish the world with the same greedinesse of minde as before: As in some part of the *Indies* they vse shels as currant as wee doe money. And *Cleobulus* in particular with a kinde of *Ironnicall* scoffe said; *My Lords*, we may as well banish out of the world *Iron*, seeing that it is also a mettall, which hath wrought infinite confusion among men. *Gold and Siluer* for the vse destinated of *God* to be the balancing proportion of all things, whereas *Iron* produced of Nature to make Ploughs, Spades, Harrowes, necessarie tooles for tillage and gardens, as for buildings, hath beene maliciously peruerterd to swords, poniards, and other instruments of war to destroy mankind.

With this opinion of *Cleobulus*, albeit most true, it was neuerthelesse concluded by all the *Lords of the Reformation*, that it being a thing impossible to conuert *Iron* from men without peruertering *Iron*, it should be no prudence to multiply their miseries, and to heale the wound with more blowes. Vnanimously it was resolved and concluded, that men should still retaine the mettals of *Gold and Siluer*, but to admonish the *Refiners* to take care for the well purifying of them, & not to lift them off from the fire, vntill they were thoroughly assured that they had cleansed them from that clammy and fast clinging *Turpentine*, which these kinde of mettals haue in them, which caused that their Coines stucke exceeding fast to mens hands, yea sometimes to their hands, whom the world reputes for honest men.



After this with extraordinary grauity *Pittacus* began thus: The world, most learned Philosophers, is fallen into deplorable miseries, because this moderne generation of mankind haue relinquished the beaten way of Vertue, and haue chose to walke through those crooked by-paths of Vice, whereby they steale away those Rewards due onely to the Vertuous. Things are now reduced, Lords, to this passe, that no man enters into the house of Dignities, of Honors, & of Rewards as in old time, through the Gate of Merit, true desert, and by vertuous paines, but by the windowes they clammer, like vnto filching theecues, which climbe to peare-trees with their back-sides turned to the true owners. Yea, and we haue known some, with the force of fauours and Violence of Bribes haue not beene ashamed to enter through the tops of Chimneyes, and by casting downe the tiles, haue through the very roofo come into the house of Honour. To amend this corrupted course of behauiour, the best way in my iudgement is to decree vpon paine of Death, that no man hereafter be so hardy, as to get into any well-deseruing place, whether it be of Honor or Gaine, but by the Royall highway of Desert; and to shut vp all other darke and damnable wayes, onely fit for Scritchowles, and Sauage Beasts. This is a great disheartning of our Learned rancke. Wherehence many of our best vnderstanding Spirits doe verily belecue, that those Hypocrites haue ioyned vnto their Craft the Spels of the Magicke Art, and thereby, like *Zoroastres*, they bewitch, enchant, and taint the mindes of some Princes, yea and those of the wiser sort.

All the Reforming Lords admired this speech of *Pittacus*, and were about to conclude with him, if *Periander* had not thus opposed: The disorder specified by *Pittacus*, most prudent Lords, is very true; but for what cause a iudicious and wise Prince refuseth to preferre vertuous and learned men so pleasing to God, so honourable and profitable for his State: and wherefore in their stead hee serues himselfe, being the life and founaine of all goodnesse, or at least seeming so to be, with debauched, vnworthy, and base-minded wretches,

is a point of great import and to be considered of vs. I know the common opinion is, that the Prince chuseth men which are like to humour and sooth him vp in his affections before the best deseruing Creature. And I acknowledge that it is a Rule of State, for a wise Prince to aduance no man to any degree but either for his wisdom or valour. This fundamentall Rule of State is well knowne vnto him, yet experience sheweth, that few Princes practise it, and mocke at such as shall tell them that they doe the contrary by a carelesse respect to the honour of their place. But the truth is, they promote ignorant persons, new fellowes, and of small desert before learned and vertuous men, not by any default of their side, but by errors ( I am sorry to speake it ) of the learned and vertuous themselves. I confesse with you, that Princes haue need of such, and of braue minded Commanders for the warres. But none of you will deny, but they stand in more need of loyall and faithfull Ministers of State, who with the gift of Secrecie may stead them as much as all their Treasure. And now it is more than apparant, that if honourable personages and valiant Souldiors had bin as true & Secret to their Countrey, as they ought, we should not behold the infinite disorders, which we see and obserue to our great grieve in this present age, euen Pigmeyes in foure dayes to shoot vp as tall as Giants, and all these vnworthy spectacles to happen for want of Fidelity, and firme regard to the interest of State. So corrupted is the mind of many men, that forgetting their owne worths and valorous magnanimities, they will be tempted with gold and ambition, yea and after sufficient promotion by their natie Prince some haue turned so vnthankfull, as to become mercenary slaues to another Prince. Which disasters Princes distrusting, they are faine to confer Honour and Offices vnto vnworthy persons, who might serue them with their Secrecie and Fidelity, and proue more thankfull for their fauours.

As soone as *Periander* had ended his Opinion, *Bias* spake in this wise: There is not any among vs here, but knowes, most wise Lords, that the world is become so much depraued,

## 224 *The New-found Politicke.*

ued, because Mankind is departed from those sacred Lawes of a contented state, the which God from the beginning allotted vnto euery Nation, hauing assigned seuerall stations, out of which they ought not to breake out. The *Britaines*, diuised or be *Britannos*, he hath placed in *Albion*, as in another world by themselves, the *Gothes* in *France*, the *Spaniards* in *Spaine*, the *Dutch* in *Germany*, the *Italians* in *Italy*, and so other Nations in other habitations. And because euery one of them should not trespasse, or like a Deluge breake out vpon their bordering Neighbours. His foreseeing Maiestie framed the fearefull Ocean to compasse about *Great Britaine*, the *Pyrenean Mountaines*, as a wall betwixt *France* and *Spaine*, and the *Alpes* betweene the *Germanes* and *Italy*, as some part of them deuides this from *France* also. The like wary diuision the Diuine Maiestie hath set betwixt *Europe* & *Africke*, as the *Mediterranean Seas*. The which hee did of purpose, that none should encroch vpon the other, and not mingle one with anothers language, as heretofore fell out at *Babel*, nor subiect the other to forraigne Lawes and Customs, whereby each one liuing at home with their neereft kinne might agree the better together without innouations or Tyrannies, and not like Drones, intrude into other mens liues to purloyn the sweet, which others wrought. Now for as much as the world is infected with the company and customs of strange Nations, let euery Nation be ordered to returne into his proper limitation; and for feare of the like soldaine and violent intrusions in time to come, let it be also enacted, that no ships be suffered to passe for the space of many yeares to come, nor any to be built, and if any Bridges lie betwixt seuerall Principalities, to sunder them the better, that these Bridges be pulled downe. If this course be taken, people shall liue more peaceably in their owne natiue soile. With wonderfull great attention this Declaration of *Bias* was heard, the which notwithstanding it was subtrilly examined by the profound wits of the Congregation, at the last seemed not expedient to be put in practise, by reason that they knew that the hatred, though excessiue, which reigned amongst diuers



diuers Nations, are not naturall, as some very simply haue coniectured, but occasioned either by the artificiall sleights of some Princes, or at least by the cunning tricks of some of their principall Ministers to busie their Princes and States braines, while they enriched their Coffers with part of the Treasures, which were to be laid out for the warres, or casually brought into the Kingdome from the warres, as prizes and booties. Besides, some Princes are skilfull masters to put in execution that old Maxime of policie; *Diuide & Impera*; Diuide and command. As for *Bias* his counsell to forbid Nauigation, who knowes not but among all Nations vnited together that harmonickall perfection is pickt out for politickall Government, which cannot be found in any one particular States, and this is gotten by peregrination into forreine countries, so that an expert Traveller returnes home like the grand *Vlysses*, hauing bettered his vnderstanding facultie by noting the diuersities of Spirits, manners, Lawes and Customs. To this may be added the other exceeding great benefits, as arise by Nauigation, as the establishing of Plantations, where their owne countrey ouerswarmes with multitudes of people, the transportation of Commodities, and the ciuiling of Sauage Nations. They obserue the wonderfull difference of Climates, the seuerall natures of the cold, the temperate, and the *Torrid Zones*, with many other remarkable euents, to the glory of our Creatour and their vnspeakeable pleasure.

Then *Cleobulus* desired leaue to speake, who boldly thus began: As farre I see, we proceed like those light-headed fellows, who make publike Languages with new conceits and curious fancies, to the outside beautifull, but not with matter of profit, as might edifie and reforme the world, the onely cause of our meeting at this time. To what purpose then for the rooting out of *Vias* should we open a window in mans heart, as *Thales* would faine perswade his Imperiall Maiestie? Wherefore should we vndertake that most painefull charge and taske for the diuiding of the vast wide world into equall parts, as *Solon* proposed? The opinions of *Chi-*

for banishing of Gold and Silver out of the world, of *Ph-  
tacks* to enforce men to walke the beaten way of Merit and  
Vertue, of *Bias* to limit men their habitations, and to forbid  
Navigation the miracle of this world, what are all these but  
Sophisticall Dreames, and Chymerizing Ideas of shallow  
imaginatiue Schollers, no way participating of the practicke  
reall way to exterminate those moderne corruptions, which  
are crept into the world? we must not treat of impossibilities,  
but fall to matters actually in earnest, and to be put in execu-  
tion, not how things ought to be done, but how substantially  
to reforme the world, according as now we find it most  
strangely deformed; and this we must performe warily, se-  
cretly, and without long arguing *pro* and *con*, or criticall ani-  
maduersions, the cause of new tumults. In brieft then I say,  
that all the reformation of this present Age consisteth in  
these few words: *To reward the good, and to punish the wicked.*

Here *Cleobulus* rested, against whom *Thales* thus violent-  
ly opposed, shewing vnto all men, how dangerous a thing it  
is, albeit for the Truths sake, to offend those persons, who  
liue in the repute of Freedome and Prudence, which made  
this sage Philosopher breake forth into these speeches: Both  
these Reuerend Lords and my selfe, most wise *Cleobulus*, see-  
ing that you had derided and despised our Opinion as So-  
phisticall and Chymerizing, expected some rare project to  
proceed from your prudent braine, or that you had brought  
from the *Indies* some new and miraculous *Bezoar* for the so-  
daine cure of the present enormities, when you sleighted our  
cares, and propounded a Receit more, I will not say difficult,  
but indeed impossible, wch might pose & go beyond euen the  
most curious Rinces of secrets, *Cassius Plin.* & *Albertus Mag-  
nus*. There is not any of vs here, my *Cleobulus*, but knows, that  
the reformatiō of the world depēds vpon rewarding the good,  
and punishing the wicked. Therefore let me demand of you,  
I pray, who be those good men and those wicked? And then  
I will returne you this resolution, that that man liueth not,  
which can discern and distinguish Truth from Hypocrisie.  
Doe you not perceiue, that counterfeit Art and dissimulation

are in these times growne to that height of perfection, that a great number of Spirits are so artificially and cunningly wicked; which seeme to wise men to be currantly good? And that those good men, which liue sincerely, ingenuously, simply, as innocent as Doves, without the least painting or dawbing of Hypocrisie, are reputed scandalous, and of a libertine loose behaviour? All men naturally loue the good, and hate the euill. Yea and most Princes themselues doe so as well by naturall instinct, as in respect of Interest of State. And when Hypocrites or flie crafty knaues are exalted to promotion, and the good are vilipended and neglected, that comes to passe not by the Election of Princes, but through the deceit and fraudulent tricks of others. Onely true bounty and ingenuous Candour are knowne to God and by him rewarded. By him Vices are discovered & punished, for he alone entreth into the depth and profundity of the heart. Yea, and my selfe too with opening the window in mans breast had pierced into the bottome of mens thoughts, had not the enemy of this honest proiect and profitable field wherein I had sowne this memorable Graine, cast in before me his Seed of Tares.

Incredible satisfaction did these words of *Thales* produce to the Congregation, who casting their eyes vpon *Periander*, he as if he had been bidden to shew his reason, thus began: The diuersitie of Opinions, which hitherto I haue heard of you, most prudent Philosophers, confirme mee in my ancient Opinion, that many a man doth die, because Physicians haue not apprehended the certainty of their Patients disease. For which errours of theirs, they are to be excused, because men may easily be deceived in these things, to the knowledge of which they walke onely with the feet of aime and coniecture. But for vs, who are thought by his Maiesty, to be the curers of the world, to be ignorant in the cure of this diseased world, it is the more shame, by how much the disease increaseth. Yet as farre as I see hitherto by reason of the varieties of the medicines, wee goe about to heale the arme in stead of the breast that is corrupted. The truth is, that



## 228 *The New-found Politicke.*

Disorders haue euer raigned among men. But now adades by reason of the Worlds decrepit age, which cause men to abound with Auarice, Ambition, and Pride, the true occasions of *Hatred*. These being occasioned by some mighty Potentates, which intrude vpon their Neighbours states, haue bred in continuance of time iealousies, warres, and as it were an hereditary heart-burning of one Nation against the other. The medicine therefore is, that Princes repent them, and content themselues with a moderate fortune, leauing their neighbours at rest, and not vnder some imaginarie pretences challenge a Catholicke Supremacie ouer their brethren.

Here *Periander* ended his discourse, whom *Solon* thus opposed: The true causes of the present euills, *O Periander*, were not omitted by vs of ignorance, as you perhaps suppose, but of a wary circumspection. The world from the beginning hath bin corrupted, and still continues. Yet it is a point of Prudence to winke at some disorders, rather than with danger to seeke to remoue them. All men liuing haue some faults. And many dishonourable acts which Princes perpetrate, we must not meddle with, lest we aggrauate and make them incurable, whom Time may correct. Therefore let a wise man either speake charitably of their spots, or hold his peace. For we shall finde worke enough to reforme the hatred of the common sort; by whom they proceed wee must not feare, but referre the prime workers of their disorders to the *King of Kings*, who sometimes hardens *Pharaohs* for their owne ruine, or *Nebuchadnezzars* for scourges to punish his rebellious seruants.

With these words, applauded of the Congregation, *Solon* made end of his speech. After whom *Cato* began in this manner: Exceeding well haue yee parlied, *O graue and famous Grecians*, in shewing the meanes to supplant and suppress *Hatred* and other humane vices. But as I conceiue, they are those, which languish of an incurable *Ptsick*, which spit vp their lungs, and do cast off their haire. In men there is no helpe; therefore the best aduice which I can giue, is

to desire a finall consummation of the world, and for vs to ioyne in prayer to the *Diuine Maiestie*, to open the Cataracts and windowes of Heauen to drowne the whole Earth againe, yet with prouiso, to preserue in new Arks all those male children, which haue not past twelue yeares of age, and that of all the *Feminine Sexe*, of what age soeuer, there may remaine no other thing behind them, saue their vnlucky memorie. And I beseech the *Diuine Maiestie*, that euen as he hath allotted vnto *Bees, Fish*, and to other infinite creatures, that prized and singular benefit to breed without the helpe of the Female kinde, that the like grace he will graunt vnto men. For, *my Lords*, I am assured, that while *women* liue in the world, that *men* will proue but a *Swinish* breed of *ungracious* brood.

It is not possible to beleue, how much the *Congregation* did stomacke this discourse of *Cato*, who had this conceit of the new Deluge in such horroure, that all the rest of the *Honourable Philosophers* fell prostrate vpon the ground with their hands lift vp towards Heauen, and deuoutly desired *God* to preserue the pretious *Sexe of Women*, and to defend *Mankind* from any such inundations, which none would wish but frantrick braines, or Chymerizing Heteroclitcs; and also to protect them from fraudulent Make-bates, who vnder colour of the Lawes with their mercenarie tongues put euen the best natur'd by the eares; and that if men would not be ruled to follow more wholesome counsell, hee would beat them with his scourges of Famine, Warre, and Pestilence, vntill they were made to know themselues, and their duties to their Neighbours; And if it pleased not his Maiestie to be so seuer and rigorous, yet that he would vouchsafe of his Soueraigne Bounty to grant this one request, *Not to enrich villaines*.

This vnhappy euent had the opinion of *Cato*, when *Seneca* thus began his Discourse: The *Reformations* of these moderne abuses, as I conceiue, ought not to be handled too bieterly, before they be first dealt with gentle hands, and managed with some milde medicines in the beginning of

## 230 *The New-found Politicke.*

their Cure. For what shame will redound to that Physician, whose Patient happens to die with his Recipe still in his body remaining? To passe from one extremitie to another, and to neglect the due meanes is rash counsell; because Man is not capable of sudden and violent mutations. And seeing that wee finde that the world in thousands of yeares is now fallen into this dangerous infirmity of calamities, he is not very wise, nay very foolish, which thinks in a few daies to reduce this corrupted body to his former health. A grosse and corpulent person, if the Physician thinks it expedient to bring him low and leane, is to be prescribed a Diet of one kind of meat at his meale, and to feed each day lesse than other, that so by degrees he forgoe his gurmandise and gluttonous custome. And so a sickly person vpon his recouerie, or a *Sea-man* returning from a long voyage must for the first fortnight sup broths, gellies, and such weake nourishments, vntill time reduce him stronger to feed on stronger meats; to which agrees that *Aphorisme* of *Hippocrates*, *Corpora, qua longo tempore extenuantur, lentè rescere oportet*. Besides this, both the quality of the Reformers, and the condition of them which haue need of reformation, are to be considered. As for example, our selues, who at this present are appointed to reforme the World, if the parties to be reformed, are Schollers, Book-sellers, Clerks, Pen and Inke men, or such like, we may preuaile to censure and correct their faults. But if we goe out of our limits, and enter into other mens professions and trades to reforme their enormities and knauish customes, we shall proue like that ridiculous *Cobler*, who going beyond his naule, presumed to iudge of colours, and to censure the exquisite picture of *Apelles*. Let vs which are Schollers meddle with matters onely in our element. Which of vs, I pray here, haue euer dealt among *Taylors*, to iudge of their deceits; among *Vintners*, to tell of their sophisticating of wines; among *Butchers*, to shew their blowing vp of flesh; among *Clergymen*, to censure of *Simony*; or among *Lawyers*, to entrap them in their equiuocations, quirks, and quilllets? yet all these



these require reformations, and the whole Earth grones and cries for ease and peace. But shall we aduenture to put our hands to hinder these disorders so far remote from our professions? Shall we like so many blind bayards, endeavour to stop bottles so crackt and cleft, and by that meanes let all the wine to spill about the roome? Then surely will a true Reformation fall out, and not before, when the Mariner is called forth to shew his iudgment of the Seas and Winds, the Souldier of marshalling a Battell, the Shepheard of his fleece, and he that hath beene beaten by Lawyers and baf-feld by their iuglings, can best demonstrate vnto vs, how to tame their *Hydra* furies and poysonous qualities. Therefore let vs call vnto vs out of euery Craft, Mysterie, and Profession, foure of the honestest, most renowned for their integrity of life, and confer with them touching the meanes, how to amend what is amisse.

Although this graue counsell greatly pleased *Pittacus* and *Ghilon*, yet all the rest detested it as bad as *Catoes*, saying, that he offred them a scandalous affront, and an indignitie to *Apolloes* Maiestie, to call in such base-minded people not trained vp in *Philosophy* to be ioyned with men of their degree. And that they were the Soules pretious faculties, which gaue the well-being to a businesse of this nature, which those wanted. Further, they concurred in this purpose, with might and maine, to preserue the Iurisdiction of their Philosophicall Court, whereof they protested to be as jealous as Husbands of their fairest Wiues; And that they thought so wise a man as *Seneca* was reputed to be, being the *Archphilosopher* of the *Latines* would haue yeilded to haue twenty ounces of his bloud drawne out of the best veine of his life, than to perswade them to lose one ounce of their Iurisdiction, whereon their reputation consisted.

The *Lords Reform vs* after they had thus checkt *Seneca*, were wonderfully perplext, and in a manner hopelesse of effecting any good, because *Mazzon* who was yet to speake, they adiudged a new man, and without experience. Yet now that his turne came to speake, he thus pithily spake: Not  
by

by any desert of mine, *most prudent Philosophers*, but by his Maiesties meere and speciall fauour am I admitted into this Honourable Assembly. And I freely acknowledge, that at this vertuous meeting it were my part to imploy my eares, rather than my tongue, being fitter to learne and to be silent. And if that any other matter had beene to be determined saying this, I would not presume to speake. But because the subiect now in hand concernes the reformation of moderne disorders, which now adaies raigne in the world, I being a moderne man, euen now come from the world, where I left them continually disputing and keeping a stir about reformations, am the better encouraged to lay my helping hand, and though I say it, I am as good a Proficient in this matter, as *Euclide* in the *Mathematicks*. The true cure of the bodies disease is to visit the sicke in person, and to conferre with him of the causes and other occurrences of his sicknesse. Euen so for the cure of the Worlds infirmities, let vs call in the World himselfe, question with him, feele his pulses, and looke vpon the diseased parts of his body, whereby the Cure may become the sooner remedied, which now seems desperate and incurable.

In such wise did this aduice please the *Lords of the Congregation*, that they suddenly commanded the World to be called vnto them, who incontinently made his repaire, being drawne in a Coach by the foure Seasons of the Yeare, and by them was led into the *Delphick Palace*. Hee was a man well stricken in yeares, yet seemed to be of a galliard and robustuous complexion, which betokened that hee might liue many yeares longer. Onely it seemed, that he had a wheezing in his pipes with some difficulty of breath, and in speaking he shewed himselfe to be somewhat hoarse, and wept continually, which argued he ayled somewhat, and laboured as yet more with some grievous tormenting paine in his braine or some other inward part of his body. The Philosophers askt him, how hee had his face so ruddy and Iouially appearing, which was a signe that he was in health, hauing store of pure radicall moysture, full of naturall heat,  
and

and could not but haue a good stomack. And they remembred, that about a hundred yeares sithence, they had seene him looke yellow, as if hee had beene sicke of the yellow Iaudise, yet now it seemed vnto them, that hee was recovered. But for all that they charged him freely to open his griefes, that they might prescribe thereafter some remedies to helpe him.

Hereupon the *World* answered: *My Lords*, Presently after I was borne, I fell into sicknesses and griefes, whereof I languish at this instant. My face, which you behold so seeming red, is done ouer with Ladies licks, slicks, and other painting stufte of the *Leuant*. My Infirmitie is like the ebbing and flowing of the Sea, with the self-same water in it, for all it seemes to increase, and fall; but with this interchangeable course, that when I haue a good countenance outwardly, my griefe lies within mee, as I feele my selfe at this instant: And when I looke ill outwardly, I am in perfect health within. But if you please to try in what case I am indeed without dissembling any longer my miseries, pull off my maske and gaudy coat, and you shall see when I am starke naked, that I am indeed but a liuing carcase. The Philosophers out of hand disrobed him, and when the *World* was stript naked, they saw, that the poore vnfortunate Creature had a scurfe foure fingers thicke ouer his flesh, as bad as the Leprosie, or the Catholicke disease, which did eat into his flesh dangerously: Whereupon the wise *Reformers* tooke ten Razours, and euery one of them with a Razour began very diligently to shaue and pare off that thicke scurfe in apparence, and busied themselves so long, vntill they pierced to the quicke bone, but could not in this huge *Colossus* meet with one Ounce of good substantiall flesh. Which when the *Reformers* perceiued, they stood a while amazed, and when they had reuested him with his maske and foolish Robes, they licensed him to depart. And then after conference among themselves, concluding the Cure too desperate and past helpe, they abandoned the care of their publike thoughts, and resolved to prouide for



## 234 *The New-found Politicke.*

the saving of their private reputation vntaind. And therefore they all ioyned together to satisfie the common peoples expectations, and because they should see they were not idle, nor carelesse of their good, they caused *Mazzon* the Secretary to pen and publish the *generall Reformation*, wherein with a preamble of magnificall words, they testified to the world, the perpetuall care which his *Maiestie* rooke for the vertuous conuersation of his *Learned Societie*, of his indefatigable paines from time to time, sustained for the safetie of *Mankind*, and of the infinite labour and toyle of the *Lords Reformers* for the compiling and setting out of good *Orders*; and afterwards descending to particulars, they did put downe the prices of Coleworts, Pilchards, Pumpions and Melons. And now when all the Lords were ready to subscribe to the Proclamation, *Thales the Milesian* remembered them, that some sic *Hucksters*, when they sold Lupines, Pease, and Oaten meale, vsed a little Dish, that it was a most intolerable scandall not to foresee this disorder. This last aduice of *Thales* seemed very expedient to the whole *Congregation*, and as most necessary it was added to the *Reformation*, that these Dishes should be greater therefore from thence forwards. Presently after they caused the Gates of the Palace to be opened, and going into the Market place, they commanded the *Cryer* to reade the *Proclamation* concerning the *Reformation* of the *World*, which was done with such applause and ioy to euery man, that all *Parnassus* rebounded with their clamours and shouts, as tokens of the great contentments they tooke for this serious and long expected *Reformation*. But the wisest sort smelt out the drift, and laughed in their sleeues to see the rascality and foolish Idiots to delight themselues with bables, as babies with nuts. Men of vnderstanding know, that vices will abound, as long as men liue in the world, *Vitia erunt donec homines*; and that humane Prudence doth consist in this, to haue wit sufficient for this one difficult resolution, *to forsake the world as another hath found it, or to liue as not to liue.*

## CHAP. 18.

*The Duke of Hernia his Speech in the Councell of Spaine to a proposition, Whether it were expedient for his Catholike Maiestie to conclude a peace with his brother in law the Duke of Sauoy?*

**I** Could wish in these present stirres of *Sauoy*, that I were rather a Minister and an executioner of your Maiesties Will & Commandement, then an Inuentor of counsell, which if it chance to succeed ill in the euent, may returne preiudiciall to the Author, and hurtfull to your Maiestie. But since we are brought to this passe, that it is necessary to collect the summe of your deliberations, and that this charge is now imposed on me, I will inforce my selfe, as farre as the weakenesse of my wit extends, to satisfie the obligation of the Loyalty, Affection, and Deuotion, which I owe vnto your Maiestie and my country. The most sacred King Treats now, whether he ought to lay downe armes and hostilitie, and to forgiue all such iniuries, as he receiued at the Duke of *Sauoyes* hands, by that meanes pleasuring the Princes of *I-taly*, and the Pope in particular, who by his Nuntio doth earnestly sollicite the same? Or else whether your Maiestie ought to deprive him by force of warre, either of all his estate, or of part, thereby to secure your Dutchy of *Milan* from his treacheries,

cheries, being a member of so great importance, both by it selfe and by the opportunity of the situation, with the which it bindes together all the Body of this great Monarchy, that it is deservedly held to be the key of all your Kingdomes, seeing that with the benefit of this Dominion, wee enjoy the preheminance of *Genoa*, and the commoditie of the Sea with hauens, from whence in times of peace by Trafficke, we receiue very great Gaine, and in times of warres we open a secure passage to our *Armadaes* and *Armies*? From hence the Kingdome of *Naples* is preserved, where we shall hardly arriue with our armed Gallies, through the midst of the *Tirrene* Sea in a tempestuous Winter, if wee touch not and ride at Anchor in one of these places. From this State in briebe we are enabled to goe into *Switzerland* and *Germany*, there to leuie Souldiers for the *Low-Countries*, to giue and receiue aid from the confederate Princes; besides that with the situation of this place; being in the midst of *Lumbardey*, we hold the residue of *Italy* bridled, that they dare not stirre to oppose our wills. The which things although they bee knowne vnto this most prudent Councell, and better yet to your Maiestie, I would notwithstanding put you in minde thereof, because you might excuse me, if I seemed perchance fearefull or iealous for the preservation thereof; and certainly when I shall conceiue that there is some securitie and sufficiency in these courses which now are propounded, I will then rancke my selfe among the first to incline to peace, wishing, that after our tedious and long warres in *Flamanders*, which haue consumed both the men and Kingdomes, wee might breathe a while, and recouer some fresh blood, and also refresh our drooping vitall Spiries, to be the better able one day gloriously to encounter and lead our armies against the Infidels, and to spread in their countries both the Christian Faith and the Empire. But what security doe wee see in these propounded Treaties? The Popes Nuntio doth promise, that if we would free the Duke of *Savoy* from the feare he is in, to be prevented and oppressed, the Duke should like-  
wise



wise disarme, and hold himselfe alwayes hereafter your Maiesties good kinsman and seruant, and that he shall neuer more minister cause of innouation, nor nourish any intelligence preiudiciall to the State of *Milan*. And to secure vs from fraud, that he shall leaue his second Sonne at your Court for pledge. But he speakes nothing of alienating and separating himselfe from the friendship and aliance of *France*; nor that he will oppose himselfe against their forces, when they shall attempt to assault this State of *Milan*. And who doth not here see his fraud, as if we were so simple in beleefe, and knew not how to diue where his thoughts tended? Are not we sufficiently choked and made perfect of his cunning deuices? Seeing that the Count *de Fuentes* hath written from *Milan*, that we ought not to trust him; that his Treaties and practises holden with the King of *France* were most certaine for the surprizing of that State; let no man tell me, that it is securitie sufficient to lay a sonne of his in our hands for hostage, because he hauing other sonnes left him at home, among whom is his Eldest sonne, will neuer care to remoue him hence to hinder his designes, no more then King *Francis* was hindred and stayed from raising Armes against the Emperour *Charles* the fift, after hee had left his two sonnes in pledge: Or the Prince of *Orange*, who for all that he had giuen a Son of his in pawne, desisted not to conspire the ruine of *Flanders* against your most glorious Father. He hath declared himselfe what he is, and what remorse of conscience he feeles, that now hath complotted against a King, his Kinsman and Benefactour; against that house, which twise restored him to the State which he holds, in that he would compasse and effect the *French Match*, notwithstanding your Maiesties disagreement and dissuasion. For your Maiestie fore-saw, that this match would proue a Seminary of Discord, and a rocke of Scandall. Now he tryeth and compasseth by all meanes onely to auoid the present perill, and to watch an occasion to deceiue vs another time, or to take vs vnprovidid. For all this, hee comes not with

humilitie to procure pardon from the magnanimity and generositie of your most sacred mind, but casting himselfe into the armes of your enemies with weapons in hand, and with threats he goes about to terrifie you, and with the greatest indignity to force your Maiestie to a peace no lesse ignominious, then ill secured. We haue too much lost ( if it be lawfull for me to speake the truth ) our reputation in yeelding to a Truce with the States of *Holland*, though the same was accounted necessary for our Affaires in regard of the difficulty to sustaine the charge of a warre so farre remote. To which now let vs adioyne this point, that there is not so vile an aduersary, who dares not to moue and conuert his thoughts at euery nouelty, and already we see the rest of the *Italians* discontented with our Greatnesse, willing to rise against vs, yea, and to call the *Jewes* and the *Turkes* in to their succour, albeit with their owne dangers, if God and the Angell Guardians of your Crowne doe not worke continuall miracles for our Defence, truly I cannot see, who shall deliuer vs. What then remains? *Most sacred King*, I am of opinion, that Peace is not to be refused, so that the same be concluded with safety, the which can no way be, but by holding in *deposito* and impawned in your hands those Forts, which shall be thought fit by your Captaines, and to relecue them vpon his cost, and for your good, or at least that hee disburse the greatest part of the expence occasioned hitherto through his default. This Demaund ought not to seeme strange vnto him, seeing he hath wittingly and aduisedly vsed such ingratitude and deceits so oftentimes against you. Therefore we must let him vnderstand, that we may not repose any confidence in him, except we haue these Forts in pledge, that so we may safely with our Reputation, reduce our matters to a sound issue, not leauing place for him in reason to complaine of vs as the Authours of the warre. But if the Duke will not consent to these our iust demaunds, and will refuse to receiue our Garrisons into his Forts, I am of the minde it is better to make warre against him, then by protracting time to expect

pest troubles hereafter in our owne home. Another time we may runne into a greater hazzard, and we may haue to doe with a more powerfull Prince. In the meane while it is conuenient for your Maiesties honour to aduenture all into the hand of Fortune, then voluntarily to yeeld with so great indignitie to conditions of so little safety. Howbeit I see not where those dangers lie, which some would make so great. I am sure, that in respect of the Iustice of the cause, where a man is not stirred with any desire to spoyle another of his due, but with necessity to preferue his owne State, and that with greater facility then some imagine, the Duke of *Sanoyes* power is not stronger then ours. I am sure, that hee is in a manner weake, and for two reasons to be slighted, as well in knowing him to be dangerously suspected, as also in that he is driuen to stand Armed and on his guard, which cannot but consume him in a short time. Nor doth their opinion any whit moue me, which say that he shall not want succours out of *France*, and out of those parts of *Italy*, which are interested for their preservation, because the *French* which should aide him, are deriued from a *Gouernment*, whereof the Head is a Woman, diuided in Religion, full of emulation, and of sundry disagreements among themselues, where it is no hard matter still to nourish and increase their doubts with their dissentions and diuersified resolutions, so that the effects of them will fall out to be of small securitie, vaine, or long and vncertaine.

And the designs of the *Italians* enuironed with our bordering States are become weakned and worne out by the sodaine death of the *French King*, in whom they had grounded their hopes; so that now being afraid of our neighbouring Forces, and by the rising Fortunes of your Maiestie, they wil not presume openly to descend into this warre, but rather by obseruing other mens proceedings, and vainely trusting to the benefit of the time, they will stand idle as mournfull spectators of the tempest, which beates on their Neighbours fields; vnto whom it shall be in your Maiesties power



power to giue them that forme and Law, whatsoeuer your Benignity shall please to impose, and hereafter shall be aduised according to the times. Neither let your Maiestie faile to entertaine them with sundry cautions and artificiall promises, and with protestations to affirme vnto them, that what you take away from their Father, you will restore into the Sonne, granting that to your Bloud, which now you haue denyed to the Father for his ill deserts. With these hopefull promises let the Prince *Philebert* be fed, and extraordinarily made much off. In the meane time then let the provisions for the warre be speedily hastened on, assembling souldiers out of the State of *Milan*, which are not enfeebled, as some (I know not whether they doe it of zeale or interest) doe expresse, to minister an occasion to the enemy of insulting. We haue men for number and valour sufficient for a greater enterprize then this, among these good store of old Souldiers exercised in the Warres of the *Low-Countries*; nor are there wanting Captaines of estimation and experience.

And if your Treasure seemes somewhat scantred, you haue a way to find out so much money as you please, by departing with diuers Merchandises, and by feeding your Creditors with the particulars of the Fleets at their returne from the *Indies*, and also by other extraordinary meanes. And seeing that your Maiestie hath no warres at this present in any other parts, the ordinary Reuenues of your Kingdomes are enough to supply the charge of this warre. Besides the scat of the warre will fall out to be in a great part of the Enemies owne Territories, which will euery day produce more fortunate conditions. Onely let your Maiestie resolue, and determine to passe (as *Cesar* did) the *Rubicon*; and then all things will succeed easie, plaine, and the fruits of the victory will alwayes overcome the lightnesse of beliefe. Occasions are rare, and you had need to meet with them: For whosoever thinkes you may aspire to the Empire of *Italy* without vnsheathing your sword, or abiding the hazard,

shewes

shewes that he hath had but small doings in the world. God and Fortune doe fauour the Aduenturous, the vigilant, and valiant; and despiserh the fearefull, the sleepy, and the pusillanimous. Shall we for friuolous suspicions of remote dangers contemne liuely and assured hopes?

I doe then conclude, Most inuincible King, that vnlesse we may haue some Forts impawned into our hands, without the which the State of *Milan* will still remaine in the same perill, we ought not in any wise to embrace that other Treaty, which is offered by the Popes *Nuntio*, nor to stay so long vntill the new King of *France* bee growne to his ripper yeares, lest hee be then incited and prouoked by this Duke, who is full of vast and irregular conceits to passe the mountaines to your dammage, but now whilst he is a Pupill, it is necessary to preuent the inconuenience and to transference the Warre into the Enemies Land. I beseech your Maiestie to consider with what good opportunity the way is made open for you to the *Monarchy of Italy*, and to the greater part of *Europe*, as God hath lately fauoured you. In what manner hath hee dissipated and confounded our Enemies Counsels by the sodaine death of *Henry the fourth*?

That Kingdome is now without a Head, *Italy* disunited and weak, *Germany* all rotted and diuided; The *Turke* is beaten backe, and intangled in the Warres of the *Leuant*, so that none is able to withstand your designs. The Iniury is apparant, which prickes you to a iust reuenge, and frees you from any blot of too much desire of Rule. Your Age which is now at the flowre, is pried into, and expected that it walke with some trauell through the way of Glory, with the which your Greatnesse shall no lesse bee conioyned, then the Aduancement of Religion, together with the safety of all Christendome. By which proceedings we shall see that verified of your Maiestie, which many Learned men with no ambiguous obseruations of the Celestiall Influences, and of the worlds passages, haue oftentimes affirmed to haue

## 242 *The New-found Politicke.*

beene ordayned in Heaven, that this most Noble Prouince  
hauing beene oppressed for so many Ages, vnder the hard  
bondage of Strangers, ought at last in the Reuolution of so  
many yeares to stand aboue all, and to extend their  
Empire to the vttermost Confines of the Earth, and  
to remaine nothing inferiour to that of the  
*Persians, of the Macedonians, or*  
*Romanes.*

---

FINIS.

---

---

---

---



